This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

3 3433 00329282 2

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

A Man & Woman of Otaheite.

Dublin Published by J. Christie. 17 Rose Lane

THE

WORLD DISPLAYED;

12188

OR,

A COLLECTION

OF

VOYAGES AND TRAVELS,

SELECTED FROM

THE WRITERS OF ALL NATIONS,

EMBELLISHED WITH PLATES.

IN TEN VOLUMES.

VOL. X.

6279

DUBLIN:

PRINTED BY J. CHRISTIE, 17, ROSS-LANE.

1815.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
436747
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.
1908

2044

910
W2

FEB 1

Transfer from Circ. Dept.

CONTENTS.

TRAVELS THROUGH THE MOST NORTHERN PARTS OF EUROPE.

Page

Chap. III. Funeral rites of the Laplanders; their general character; beasts, birds, and fishes; traffic with the natives of Borandia; description of the Borandians; the author sails to Petzora..... 1

Chap. IV. The author and his company kindly entertained at Petzora; prosecute their journey; meet with five exiles in the woods of Siberia, one of whom is known by the author; the hardships endured by these poor people. The author arrives at the town of Papinowgorod; an account of the manners, customs and buildings, of the inhabitants. He travels through Samojedia; a description of the persons and manners of the Samojedians..... 17

Chap. V. The author sails to Nova Zembla. An account of the sea-horse fishery in the straits of Weygatz. Some of the crew land in a small island in these straits and catch a number of penguins..... 31

Chap. VI. The author sails to the coast of Greenland, lands in Iceland, and ascends Mount Hecla, where he is exposed to great danger by an irruption of that burning mountain. Other curiosities in the island described, with some account of the inhabitants. The author sails on his return to Denmark, and arrives at Copenhagen.... 40

THE TRAVELS OF MONSIEUR MAUPERTUIS, TO DETERMINE THE FIGURE OF THE EARTH AT THE POLAR CIRCLE.

Chap. I. They attempt to make their observations on the coast of the gulf of Bothnia, but are disappointed. A description of several mountains, woods, and rivers in Lapland in summer. A mountain on fire..... 49

Page

Chap. II. The dreadful hardships they suffered from the severity of the weather, and the beauty of the northern lights in a Lapland winter..... 61

COOK'S FIRST VOYAGE.

Chap. I. Design of the voyage. Character of lieutenant Cook. Arrival at Madeira; description of that island. Arrival at Rio de Janeiro; description of. Of the inhabitants of Terra del Fuego; fatal accident there. Description of Otaheite. Transactions with the natives. Observation of the transit of Venus. Departure from Otaheite..... 69

Chap. II. Description of the Society Islands; manners of the inhabitants; arrival at New Zealand; transactions with the natives; their manners and customs; departure from New Zealand..... 124

Chap. III. The navigation of the eastern coast of New Holland. A most astonishing escape from shipwreck. The discovery of Endeavour Straits; passage to Batavia, and return of the ship to England..... 153

COOK'S SECOND VOYAGE.

Chap. I. Object of the voyage. Occurrences in the first attempt, from their departure from the Cape of Good Hope until the arrival of captain Cook at New Zealand 183

Chap. II. The second attempt made by captain Cook, in the Resolution, to penetrate towards the South Pole. From his sailing from New Zealand, in November 1773, to his arrival at Cape Deseada, in December 1774..... 197

Chap. III. Captain Cook's cruise in the Southern Atlantic Ocean, with an account of the lands discovered in that sea 213

COOK'S THIRD VOYAGE.

Chap. I. Object of the voyage. Departure from England. Arrival at the Sandwich Islands..... 227

Page

Chap. II. Captain Cook's attempt to discover a northern passage; his return to winter at the Sandwich Islands, and tragical death..... 307

Chap. III. Captain Clerke's attempt to navigate the North Sea, in the year 1779; his death; and the return of the ships to England by the route of the East-Indies..... 394

DIRECTIONS FOR PLACING THE PLATES

OF THE TENTH VOLUME.

A Man and Woman of Otaheite ..... Frontispiece
Inhabitants of Terra del Fuego ..... Page 84
A young Woman of Otaheite bringing a present 113
A Dance in Otaheite 115
Omai's double Canoe, and the Ships approaching Huaheine 124
A Hippa, or place of retreat, in New Zealand 136
A Man of Cape Diemen 144
Family in Dusky Bay 152
A Man of New Holland tatooed 154
Two Natives of New Holland advancing to combat 155
A Man of Prince William's Sound 169
A Woman of the Island of Tanna 208
Feenou, chief of the warriors of Tongataboo 257
Poulaho, king of the Friendly Islands 261
The Tschuktschi and their habitations 349
The Death of Captain Cook 385
A Kamtscadale travelling in winter 400
An inside view of a winter Hut of the Kamtschadales 401

THE

WORLD DISPLAYED.

TRAVELS THROUGH THE MOST NORTHERN PARTS OF EUROPE.

CHAP. III.

Funeral rites of the Laplanders; their general character; beasts, birds and fishes; traffic with the natives of Borandia; description of the Borandians; the author sails to Petzora.

WE arrived at the first village by seven o'clock, soon crossed the river, and went directly to our old quarter, where our landlord, in hopes of getting more tobacco, received us very joyfully: he immediately presented us a cup of brandy, and asked us, if we should have the rein-deer put to the sledges; to which we replied, that we chose to rest ourselves till morning, there being no village for several leagues from his habitation. Upon this he filled us another cup, and when we had drank it, offered to take us with him to the funeral of one of his neighbours, who had been dead about four hours.

We were very glad of this opportunity of seeing their funeral ceremonies, and therefore accompanied him to the house of the deceased, when we saw the corpse taken from the bears skins on which it lay, and removed into a wooden coffin by six of his most intimate friends; the body being first wrapped in linen, and the face and hands only left bare. In

one hand they put a purse with money in it, to pay the fee of the porter of the gate of paradise; and in the other, a certificate, signed by a priest, directed to St. Peter, to certify that he was a good Christian, and ought to be admitted into heaven: and at the head of the coffin was placed a picture of St. Nicholas, who was one of the seven deacons mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles, a saint greatly reverenced in all parts of Muscovy, where he is supposed to be a particular friend of the dead, upon which account his picture is always fixed near a corpse, instead of a crucifix: he is represented in a pilgrim's habit, with a long robe, a broad girdle about his waist, and a staff in his hand. They also put into the coffin a rundlet of brandy, some dried fish and rein-deer venison, for him to eat and drink on the road. They then lighted some fir-tree roots, piled up at a convenient distance from the coffin, wept, howled, and made a variety of strange gestures, assuming a thousand different attitudes, to show the extravagance of their sorrow. When this noise and these gesticulations were over, they marched round the corpse several times in procession, asking the deceased, why he died? whether he was angry with his wife? whether he stood in need of meat, drink or clothes? if he had not succeeded when fishing, or lost his game when hunting? they then resumed their howling and stamping, with all the signs of distraction. One of the priests, who assisted at the solemnity, frequently sprinkled holy water upon the corpse, as also did the mourners. Being now almost deafened with noise, and wearied with looking on these barbarous rites, we left our landlord behind us, and returned to his cottage, where we found his wife at home. She had made a

sally from the place in which her husband had confined her on our arrival, and no sooner saw us, than supposing he was in our company, would have retired to her corner; but our interpreter letting her know, that the good man was at the funeral, and would not return for some time, she staid and viewed us all round, one after another, drew her seat near us, and showed us a bonnet of her own embroidering, very curiously performed with tinsel thread. The wives of the Muscovite Laplanders make clothes for themselves, their husbands, and their children, and at the edge they are all embroidered with that thread. She was pretty handsome, well-shaped, and appeared to be good-humoured, and well pleased with us. While our host was busied about the funeral, we pulled out some of our provisions, and gave our landlady some of every sort to taste. She liked them all, especially the gingerbread; but having drank two or three glasses of brandy, withdrew to her place of confinement, for fear of her husband's arrival; for he would have certainly resented her having taken such liberty, which would have raised his jealousy, had he found her among us. When he came home, he obliged us to take a cup or two more, to smoke a pipe, and to sup with him; for he brought such provisions as he thought would be most grateful to our palates, particularly salt butter, which we eat with bread; and as our guide would not taste any thing that was salt, he got him some dried fish, and some bear's flesh, which he broiled on the coals.

All the cottages in this village were, like those we had observed in other places, built of wood, and covered with turf, but they were handsomer, being both within and without adorned with fish bones,

curiously inlaid. We, according to custom, laid down with the family on bears skins, our landlady alone being obliged to conceal herself till we were gone.

Early the next morning, our host got ready our rein-deer and sledges, when having stowed our bales, our cattle set off, and in two hours carried us six leagues. As we were passing between two hills, we saw a Laplander going a hunting, who came up to us, skaiting on the snow as fast as we rode in our sledges, for the snow seldom melts there till Midsummer. His skates, which were made of the bark of a tree, were seven feet and a half long, four fingers broad, and flat at the bottom. He was dressed like the other Laplanders, in a garment made of the skin of a rein-deer, and an arrow in one hand, a bow in the other, and a large quiver hanging at his back, and was followed by a black cat. He kept company with us about half a league, and we parted at the foot of the next mountain.

We continued our route three days, stopping at the same places where we lay before, and meeting with nothing extraordinary; our entertainment, our way of travelling, and every thing else being the same as before: and on the 21st of May, about nine o'clock at night, we arrived safe at Varanger, having every where been received with great civility, and suffered no injury in our whole journey.

From observing the manners and dispositions of the Laplanders, I am enabled to affirm, that, notwithstanding their ignorance and superstition, they are remarkable for their honesty, and are unacquainted with theft or fraud. They throw the dart with such dexterity, as easily to hit a mark of the size of a crown piece, at the distance of thirty paces;

and are so expert in the use of the bow and arrow, that they can shoot their game in what part they please; and yet are so averse to war, that whenever the kings of Denmark or Sweden, or the czar of Muscovy, have occasion for soldiers, they leave their dwellings and fly to the woods, for fear of being pressed into the service.

They have plenty of geese, ducks, pullets and other sorts of fowl, which they feed with the grain of which they make their drink, and when that is scarce, give them dried fish. Here is also a bird of prey, of a deep pearl-colour, much bigger than an eagle: his head is like that of a cat, and his eyes red and sparkling: his claws and beak resemble those of an eagle, and he feeds upon hares and other small game. Most of the beasts of Lapland are white, as the wolves, bears, foxes and hares; even the crows may be compared to the swan for whiteness, and have nothing black about them but their bills and feet. They have a kind of dogs, a foot long, and only four inches high; their hair is an inch long, of a yellowish white, rough, and standing up like a hog's bristles; the head and snout resemble those of a rat; they have straight ears like a wolf, with a curled tail, and are very ready at catching mice, which they watch, and eat like our cats; on which account the Laplanders, notwithstanding their ugliness, set a high value upon them. The fish, which, when dried, serves them for bread, is called raff, and is firm, substantial, and, excepting the fat, has a very good taste. They have plenty of other sorts of fish; and though they have such an antipathy to salt, yet they boil all their meat in salt water, if they are near enough to the sea to get it conveniently.

Within two or three days after our return to Varanger, the captain had repaired the ship, and taken in his lading and ballast; in the mean time our crew treated the inhabitants with brandy and tobacco, to keep them in good humour; for fear lest, if they were not bribed to be our friends, they should, in revenge, plague us with contrary winds. We set sail from Varanger on the 26th of May, with a gale as much in our favour as we could possibly desire, which the sailors ignorantly attributed to the friendship of the Laplanders; but this breeze soon shifting, we were obliged to cast anchor under the shore, opposite the island of Wardhuys; when being observed by the governor of the castle, he came off to us in a shallop, and was entertained in as obliging a manner as possible; after which he returned to the castle very well satisfied with his reception. The next day the wind settling, we proceeded again to sea, and held our course north-north-east, and in three days got into a latitude where there was no night, we never losing sight of the sun, which was always above the horizon.

On the 31st day of May we saw the mountains of Greenland, at which time a north wind blew with such violence, that we could not keep to sea, and were obliged to steer to the east-south-east, in order to make the shore, that we might be sheltered from the weather. We continued our course for several days, and at length cast anchor in a good harbour on the coast of Borandia.

We had scarce entered this harbour before we espied two ships that were at anchor about a musket shot from us, which we found were the two ships in our company, that had been separated from us in the storm that drove us into Varanger. We

were extremely glad at finding them, and accordingly fired three guns, and hung out our flag in the stern, as a signal of our arrival. They were filled with equal joy at seeing us safe, answered our guns by twice as many, and hung out all their flags and pendants: we did so too; but though we wished for an opportunity of sending our long-boat to them, to learn the particulars of their escape, the wind blew so stiff, that we durst not attempt it till twenty-four hours after. They were no less impatient to know how we escaped, and, as soon as the wind slackened, a boat came off from each of them on board us, when we embraced each other with extraordinary joy and affection, as people who had found friends whom they thought buried in the deep.

They told us, that the storm drove them on the coast of Juhorskt, near an island, where they had like to run ashore in three fathoms water, and were forced to tack about immediately, for fear of running upon the rocks; when by the favour of a north-north-east wind, they got out to sea without much difficulty, and in three days reached the bay where we found them. We in our turn told them the dangers we had encountered, and our being forced to enter the port of Varanger to refit our ship; and informed them of our journey through Danish, Swedish and Muscovite Lapland, and of our traffic and adventures. This account encouraged them to go ashore, to try if they could get any body to trade with them; when a council being held, it was resolved, that a captain, a supercargo, two accomptants, who understood both the language of the North and the Russian, with twenty seamen and myself, well armed, should land, and take with

us several days provisions, and some goods for traffic.

Pursuant to this resolution two long-boats were got ready, and, having landed, we ascended a hill, to see if we could discover any habitations; but perceiving none, we marched to a neighbouring mountain, at half a league's distance, where we observed five or six persons among some bushes of thorns and briars, who came towards us, till they perceived us advancing, and then turned their backs and fled away so fast, that we lost sight of them in an instant. However, imagining that their track would lead us to some village, we followed it, and after a march of two hours, as we descended a mountain, we observed some huts in the valley below; and advancing towards them, perceived thirty or forty men, armed with darts and arrows, prepared to give us battle; for seeing so strong a body of us, they took us for enemies. We halted for some time, in order to consult whether we should retreat to our ships, or attack them; and being sensible that nothing was to be got by defeating them, were inclined to retire; when one of our accomptants offered to go to them by himself, and to let them know, that we were friends and merchants, who were come with a view of trading with them, if they had any thing to exchange with us.

This proposal being approved, he approached them, carrying two rolls of tobacco, and a small keg of brandy. When he came within hearing, one of them, who seemed to be their chief, called to him in the Muscovite language, asking who we were, and what we would have; and on being answered that we were merchants, come to trade with them, they seemed satisfied, and made signs to him

come nearer; when giving us the same signal, we, to our mutual satisfaction, joined companies.

On our coming up to them, I was surprised to see them much shorter than the Laplanders; their eyes are small, like ferrets, and what is usually called the white, is of a reddish yellow; their heads are large, their faces flat and broad, with flat noses and swarthy complexions; and their legs are short and thick. The Borandian women are not at all handsomer than the men; they dress like them, and also, like them, spend their time in fishing and hunting. Their clothes are, a cap, a jacket that reaches down to their knees, a straight pair of breeches, and stockings, all made of white bear skins, with the hairy side outwards; but their shoes are made of the bark of a tree. They roast all the meat they obtain by hunting, eat it without salt, and use fish instead of bread. Their common drink is water, in which juniper-berries are steeped till they rot, which gives the water an agreeable taste, at least in a country where nothing better is to be had. Their huts are low and oval, covered with fish-bones, and have no light but what comes in at the door, which resembles the mouth of an oven. They drink immoderately when they can get brandy, and the most acceptable present that can be made to them is, either some of that liquor or tobacco: but they seem to have little or no notion of religion.

Having purchased all the furs they brought with them, we asked if there was any conveniency for travelling, in order to trade with the inhabitants; to which they answered in the affirmative, but that we must expect nothing but furs. This we let them know was the commodity we wanted, and they

assured us, that we might have what we would of that kind for tobacco, brandy and money; and if we pleased, might trade as far as Siberia, whither they would conduct us. We accordingly agreed with them to be our guides thither and back again, and to furnish us with what conveniences the country afforded in our journey, for two rolls of tobacco, and two quarts of brandy; promising them further rewards, in case the trade turned to account, and they contributed to it by their assistance. The bargain being concluded, our captain gave them another brimmer of brandy, and sent them ashore to prepare what was proper for our journey. They soon got every thing ready, and made such a report of our kindness to them, while they were on board, that their countrymen expressed great friendship for us, and two boats were sent ashore with our supercargo to purchase for us. They were, however, at first unwilling to come aboard our ships: but we soon became better acquainted, and they came freely whenever they had an opportunity. We bought their furs, treated them with brandy, and in return they invited us to their habitations.

In seven or eight hours we had provided every thing ready for our journey, and our two Borandian guides had brought six sledges, drawn by six rein-deer, to the water side, which were all that were to be had in these parts. The rein-deer, however, being larger than those of Lapland, were able to draw two men, and the Borandian sledges were contrived to hold them. The captain now called a council of all the officers, and it was agreed, that the supercargo, and two accomptants, who could speak the Russian language, myself, and a seaman out of each ship, should go with the two Borandians. One

of the sledges we loaded with tobacco, gold, silver and copper, to the value of three or four thousand pounds: our supercargo and myself rode together in one of these sledges; one accomptant and a Borandian in a third; the other accomptant and the other Borandian in the fourth; two seamen in the fifth, and the other seaman in the sixth; and as he rode by himself, we stowed some barrels of brandy and tobacco in his sledge. One sat at one end of the sledge, and the other at the other, facing each other. The rein-deer ran as swiftly as those of Lapland, and in eight hours time drew us twenty leagues, over hills and dales, and through several woods; yet in all this great extent of country we met nobody in our way. We then stopped at a village, and baited our rein-deer with moss, while we ourselves eat some biscuit and beef, and our Borandians refreshed themselves with dried fish, dipped in fish oil, for they would not touch our salt meat, and did not like our biscuit. Both they and we drank at a neighbouring spring, and then cheered ourselves with a glass of brandy. Being thus refreshed, we again mounted our sledges, and travelled three hours longer; when we perceived a large village at the foot of a mountain, the huts of which were better built, and closer together than those of Lapland; thither we hastened to take up our lodging, but were obliged to divide our company, because one of these cottages would not hold us all. We met with the same reception from our landlords as in Lapland, and gratified them with a piece of roll tobacco and a cup of brandy; our guides took care of our rein-deer, and we laid down to rest on bears skins.

I distinguished one part of the day from the other

by day and night, though there was really no night at all; but having slept six or seven hours, we arose in order to trade with the inhabitants of the village, who, being informed of our business by our guides, soon produced some wolves skins, white fox skins, two dozen of ermines, three hundred grey squirrels, and seven pair of sables; but they were neither so fond of tobacco nor brandy as the Laplanders, or the Borandians dwelling on the coast. Hunting is their only diversion and employment. In the summer they either eat their meat boiled, or broiled on the coals, and during that season provide enough to serve them in winter, preserving it by drying it in the sun, cutting it in pieces, and spreading it on the tops of the houses, which is the only curing they bestow upon it. They change their dwellings like the Kilops, are extremely stupid, and have very disagreeable features. Their white bear skin clothes resemble those of the other Borandians, and are tied round their waist with a girdle four inches broad, at which hangs a stone that will cut like a razor. The only difference observable between the women, who are dexterous hunters, and the men, is that their hair is twisted, and hangs down on their shoulders; and their carrying only a stick in their hand, which is sharp at one end, and being of a tough wood, serves them for a defensive weapon. The men carry at their backs a quiver, and the strings of their bows are made of the rind of a tree.

We bought the furs the inhabitants had to sell for money and copper, ordered our rein-deer to be put to the sledges, mounted them, and each of us having drank a glass of brandy, proceeded on our journey. We now rode eight or nine hours before

we came to any habitation; but at last our guides perceiving three or four huts, turned our rein-deer up to them, but finding no person there, we regaled ourselves on our own provisions, while our cattle fed on the moss, which grew there in abundance; and, having refreshed ourselves and our beasts for three hours, proceeded on our journey.

We were now fifteen hours without seeing any human creature, or so much as a hut, when we overtook some hunters at the foot of a hill, one of whom was dressed after the Moscovite fashion, in a long robe tied round his waist, with a girdle four inches broad: it was made of a white bear's skin, with the hair outwards, and edged black. His cap was made of a black fox's skin, and his breeches and stockings of the skin of a rein-deer; his shoes were made of fish skin, and were not unlike those worn at Varanger. The two other persons were dressed like us, in white bear skins with the hair outwards, and carried at their backs bear skins, wolf skins, white fox skins, some ermines, and very fine sables. The former carried only twelve white crows, and seven sables, which hung at his girdle. On our coming near them, one of our guides stopped to talk with them, and, to our great surprise, got out of the sledge, and the other went into it. Neither the supercargo who rode with me, nor I, could tell how to account for this complaisance. We, however, pursued our journey, with the hunter in our company, for above an hour longer, through this desolate country, without meeting any other person, or the least sign of a habitation; but at last drawing near the brow of a high mountain, we perceived at the foot of it several houses, built close together, and had a distant view of the sea. When we arrived

at the village, we stopped at the door of the person who had taken our guide's place, and soon found that he was a man of authority, and he desired the inhabitants to serve us as his friends.

The name of this village is Vitzora. The inhabitants no sooner saw this person in our company, than they ran to help us out of the sledges, and to unharness our rein-deer. He bartered all his skins with us for brandy and tobacco, except his bear skins, which we did not choose to buy, and his sables, which he durst not sell; for the czar reserving that commodity for himself, those in any part of his dominions who sell it without a licence from him, are severely punished. Officers are appointed to take these furs of such as have them; they have warehouses in several places of the empire, and are the only persons permitted to trade in that merchandize.

Having dealt with the Borandian gentleman for all the furs he had to sell, he sent two of his servants about the village, to tell the inhabitants, that if they would bring their skins to his house, they might have brandy and tobacco for them, as their master had already had for his. The Borandians of Vitzora were glad to hear of so good a market; they immediately brought us all their furs, and we bought in this place above fifteen hundred skins of all sorts, except sables; when our cargo becoming too bulky to be carried in a sledge, we desired our landlord to do us the favour to lend us his bark, and some of his servants to go in it with one of our seamen, who was a good sailor, to carry the furs aboard our ship, which lay at above one hundred leagues distance; for the sailor, and the Borandian servants, who were used to the coasts, might easily

manage that small vessel, and convey our merchandize to our companions. He readily agreed to this request, and we paid him for the use of his bark in tobacco and brandy.

This bark was built in the form of a gondola, it being broad in the middle and sharp at each end. It was entirely of wood, joined with pegs, without so much as a nail in it, or the least bit of iron. In the middle it had a fir-tree mast, to which was fastened a square piece of coarse cloth, made of the rind of a tree, which served for a sail; the cordage was made of the same materials, and the two anchors were formed of a very heavy kind of wood. When they were about to put to sea, he privately showed us thirty pair of sable skins, which we bought with ready money, slipped them on board, and the vessel put off immediately. This, however, was running a dangerous risk; for had there been any searchers at hand, he would not only have been corporally punished, but also he and his whole family sent as slaves into Siberia.

The bark being out of sight, our supercargo and accomptants sat down to drink with the Borandian gentleman, while the two seamen and I walked out to take a view of the place, the situation of which was very pleasant, having two mountains on each side of it, almost a league in height. All the houses were built and artfully covered with fish bones, and the crannies every where stopped up with moss, as close as the caulking of a ship, and in some places that were most exposed to the wind, were covered with turf very neatly laid. The doors, like those we had seen in other parts of the country, were built like the mouths of ovens, and at the tops of the houses were a kind of lattices, to admit

the light. The inhabitants were very short and swarthy, with flat noses and disagreeable persons. All the women and children appeared industrious, for we found them busily employed, some making fishing-nets of the rind of trees, others sails, which looked like fine mats, their needles being formed of fish bones. Others were employed with knives, and others again with hatchets, in different kinds of business.

As we had not yet disposed of half our commodities, and were in a country abounding with furs, we, at our return to our lodgings, consulted with our supercargo and accomptants, when it was agreed, that as our commission for traffic and discovery was very extensive, we would proceed as long as we found the trade good, and our cash, brandy and tobacco, held out. Having taken this resolution, we sent our guides back with the rein-deer and sledges, and with letters to our captains, to inform them of our success and resolution; and then, by the assistance of our host at Vitzora, hired a bark to carry us to Petzora, the capital of a principality of the same name, on the north coast of the Muscovite sea: our landlord was so kind as to embark with us, and, by the help of an easterly wind, we coasted along the shore, and in fifteen hours reached Petzora.

CHAP. IV.

The author and his company kindly entertained at Petzora; prosecute their journey; meet with five exiles in the woods of Siberia, one of whom is known by the author; the hardships endured by these poor people. The author arrives at the town of Papinowgorod; an account of the manners, customs and buildings, of the inhabitants. He travels through Samojedia; a description of the persons and manners of the Samojedians.

ON our arrival at Petzora we waited upon the collector of the customs, who there assumes the title of governor, and lives at the castle. He was dressed after the manner of the country, in a robe of violet-coloured cloth, and entertained us with some excellent metheglin, which was as racy as sack, after which we had brandy and gingerbread; the common collation all over Muscovy. As we knew that he had the care of the czar's sables, we asked him to sell us some; and on his desiring to know how many we wanted, we told him, we would take all he had, if he would let us have them a pennyworth. Upon this he conducted us to the warehouse, where there were five zimmers, each zimmer being fifty pair, among which there were two zimmers as black as jet, and the finest I ever saw, for which we paid him 500 ducats, and the other three zimmers we purchased for 800 crowns, or 400 ducats. Having paid him his money, he gave us a noble entertainment of roasted wild-fowl, young rein-deer venison, which is very good meat, and fresh fish; two boats having at our first arrival been ordered to catch some for our entertainment. After this meal we sat eight hours drinking brandy and metheglin, the

fumes of which would much sooner have got in my head, had I not every now and then eat a Muscovite biscuit, which is most excellent bread. At length, however, becoming intoxicated, the governor and his guests all laid down on white bear skins, for he had no beds, when having slept six or seven hours, we arose, and the governor immediately presented us with a bumper of brandy.

After breakfast, being desirous of going through the town, in order to try whether we could carry on any trade with the inhabitants, the governor ordered one of his officers to accompany us, and we soon bought of several people 2000 grey squirrel skins, four dozen of ermines, 500 fox skins, the greatest part of which were as white as snow, 120 white wolf skins, and 200 martens of a greyish colour; all which we bought for 400 ducats, half of which we obliged them to take in copper money, because it encumbered us, and the other half in gold and silver. We then returned to the castle, whither we sent our merchandize, and there packed it up in bales, covered with the same sort of stuff as the sails of the bark. Having thus taken care of our goods, it was resolved that one of our accomptants should return with them to the ships, for which purpose we desired the governor to furnish us with a bark, to which he agreed. We also hired three Borandians to assist the accomptant in his voyage, the governor passing his word for them, that they should be trusty and do us no wrong. For the hire of the bark, and the wages of the Borandians, we paid him ten ducats more, and gave the Borandians some pieces of tobacco, the governor promising to satisfy them for their trouble, when they came back.

This vessel having set sail, we fell to drinking

again, when the quantity drank by the gentleman of Vitzora was quite surprising; but having continued drinking four hours together, we composed ourselves to rest on bears skins, as before. The next morning our supercargo desired the governor, to let us have some rein-deer, to carry us into Siberia; upon which he furnished us with seven of them, and the same number of sledges, one for our supercargo, one for our other accomptant, one for myself, two for our two seamen, one for our guide, and the other for our tobacco and brandy. He also supplied us with provisions, that were to last till our arrival at Papinowgorod, a city in the province of Petzora, on the borders of Siberia. Our factor having taken the money he had left, and the seven rein-deer being put to the seven sledges, the governor ordered another to be got ready for one of his domestics, whom he directed to wait upon us seven leagues of our way, till he arrived at a village, from whence he was to take back our rein-deer, for all which he was to have no more than four ducats. But he would not let us go without our drinking five or six glasses at parting.

Having returned our hearty thanks to the governor and the gentleman of Vitzora, for their many civilities, we got into our sledges, and travelled four hours through intricate, unbeaten ways, without seeing any living creature, till at last we met four white bears of an enormous size, which crossed our way, and seeing us fled into a wood. In about two hours after we arrived at a village, consisting of seven or eight cottages; but the inhabitants being all gone to hunt, we alighted to refresh ourselves on the provisions we had brought with us. In the mean time five or six men, with their wives and

children, returned from hunting, bringing with them six bears skins, four wolves skins, a couple of ermines and eight sables. They were surprised to see us there, and would have fled, had not the governor of Petzora's servant assured them, that we were friends and merchants, bound for Papinowgorod: when coming up to us, they viewed us narrowly, being amazed at seeing so many strangers in so unfrequented a place. They were astonished at our dress, our looks and shape, and at our speaking a language so different from theirs, which to them was quite unintelligible. However, by the assistance of our interpreter, we bought all the skins they dared to sell us, and they lent us reindeer and sledges to carry us to the mouth of the river Papinowgorod.

We now left the river Petzora, the coast of which we had followed some time, and proceeded towards that of Papinowgorod, through almost impassable ways, over high mountains, and through woods and forests, for three hours; but at length, on our approaching a thick wood, we observed five men in white bear's skin long coats, made after the Muscovite fashion, each of whom had a gun on his shoulder, a pouch on one side, and a knife and sheath on the other. As they made up towards us, our guides stopped their rein-deer, when the five men being near enough to be heard, one of them, perceiving that we were strangers, bade us good-morrow in the German tongue, wishing that they were as free as we were. Our supercargo, being a native of Lower Saxony, was attracted by the sound of his own language, and asked him what countryman he was; when entering into conversation, several things were started, by which they understood

that they had been formerly acquainted: upon which the supercargo alighted out of his sledge, embraced him, and asked him how he came there to which he replied, that he had been banished for hunting sables, a very capital offence, for which some are sent into exile for ten years, some for six, and some for three.

While they were discoursing, I had time to look at the other four, when I imagined that I had some knowledge of one of them, but could not recollect who he was; and the more I looked at him, the more firmly was I persuaded that I had seen him before, and therefore could not forbear getting out of the sledge to satisfy my curiosity; but I no sooner set my foot on the ground, than the man, who remembered me better than I did him, ran to me, and embraced me, asking in French, whence I came, and whither I was going. This increased my surprise, since I could not yet call to mind who he was, for he was strangely altered by his habit, by the length of his beard, and by his head being bald; he was besides almost reduced to a skeleton. Finding that I could not recollect him, he told me his name, and that he had often drank with me at Stockholm. Upon this I immediately recollected, that he was a person to whom I had been very much obliged, and had received many civilities from him in Sweden. He was born in Lorrain, was a gentleman by birth, and a lieutenant-colonel of a regiment of Muscovite horse. He had endeavoured to persuade me to go with him to Moscow, by offering to procure me an honourable and profitable post, but I declined accepting his proposal. When I compared the fine appearance he made at that time, the respect with which he was treated, as well on ac-

count of his estate, as the place he enjoyed, and his bearing the character of a man of honour and bravery, with the miserable condition to which I now saw him reduced, I could not help being afflicted; I embraced him with extraordinary affection and tenderness, and asking the cause of his disgrace, he replied, that the czar, suspecting that he had not been so zealous in his service as he ought to have been, had banished him to Siberia for three years, where he endured miseries that are not to be expressed, he being exposed to the greatest dangers in hunting wild bears for his subsistence, to the miseries of hunger and the rigour of the seasons, which he and his companions were forced to endure, nobody daring to afford them any relief. He added, that they were almost every day attacked by wild beasts, which they met in herds, seeking for pasture, and that they found great difficulty in defending themselves; that, besides, they were condemned to supply the czar's officers with a certain number of sables, under the penalty of being severely lashed, with a whip of leathern thongs, on their naked backs, till they were covered with blood.

One of the others had been receiver-general of the czar's revenues in one of the provinces, another had been a major-general, and the fifth a man of note. They all joined in deploring their misfortunes, exclaimed loudly against the czar, and declared, that when once their time of exile was expired, they would get far enough out of his power.

We now sat down with them on the moss, took out the best provisions we had, and desired them to partake with us; we even offered them our assistance to facilitate their escape; but they told us it was impracticable, they being known to all the

governors of the forts and places through which we and they must necessarily pass; and in case they should be taken, both they and we would be put to a most cruel death. This increased our concern for these unfortunate gentlemen, and we all shed tears at the sight of what they suffered, and the idea of what they were still to endure. We could not think of parting immediately with persons in such a disconsolate state, some of whom we had known in better days; we therefore told them our trade was not in such haste, as to prevent our spending a day or two with men in their unhappy circumstances, whom we equally loved and esteemed. They received this proposal with great joy, told us they had five little huts which they had built in the neighbouring wood, and if we would be so kind as to go thither with them, they should be infinitely obliged to us, and all the skins they had should be at our service, except the sables, which they were forced to reserve for the czar; and added, that the remembrance of the happy hours they should spend with us in their solitude, would make many future months glide on the more sweetly. We therefore ordered our guide to unharness the rein-deer, and to convey our goods into the huts the gentlemen had erected, to defend them from the weather.

We found on approaching these huts, that necessity had rendered these unhappy men ingenious. They were built of fir, higher than any we had seen in our travels; there were two or three rooms in each of them, and lattices to let in the light at the sides. They were each shaded by trees, and so artfully paved with fish-bones, that the floors looked as if they were inlaid with ivory. To secure themselves from the wild beasts, they had dug a trench

round these buildings, and pallisaded the inside of it with strong posts, and pieces of wood nailed across them, on the top of which were spikes of fish bones. Thus when their gate was shut, they were as secure as in a fortified place. They had within all sorts of hunting and fishing-tackle, besides a good store of salted rein-deer venison, biscuit and metheglin.

While the rest of the company sat down to drinking, my friend and I withdrew to his hut to converse together. We entered into discourse on his adventures; he told me he intended to return home after his time of exile should be expired, and gave me his direction in Lorrain. Our conversation turned partly on our former acquaintance, and partly on the wildness of the country, and the barbarity of its inhabitants.

When my friend and I had tired ourselves with talking, we laid down upon bear skins, as our companions also did when wearied with drinking, and slept sound till next morning. We arose early, and, at the desire of the five banished gentlemen, took each of us a gun, and went with them into the woods to examine their snares, to see what prey was caught in those they had laid the night before. We killed among us ten or twelve white foxes, and half a dozen grey martens, but met with none of the larger game; and as we resolved to pursue our journey in the afternoon, we did not choose to lose our time in hunting. We therefore soon returned to the huts, and both we and our hosts furnishing provisions, refreshed ourselves as well as could be expected in so wretched a place. After we had drank plentifully, the gentlemen forced us to take seven bear skins, ten white fox skins, two pair of

ermines, and eight wolf skins, for which they would take no money. However, we with difficulty prevailed on them to accept some brandy, tobacco and cloth, which we took care should exceed in value the commodities they had given us. We wept reciprocally at parting, wishing them patience to endure their sufferings, and a happy deliverance out of them; and having mounted our sledges, continued our travels with the usual expedition.

Having now proceeded three hours without meeting with any habitation, we discovered five or six huts together, in which were about a dozen persons, from whom we bought all their skins. We now following the course of the river Petzora, frequently met with small villages, in some of which we found inhabitants, and in others none; but whenever we met with any body to trade with us, we bought their furs either with money or brandy.

We at length reached a large ridge of mountains, that are almost always covered with snow, and so barren, that neither man nor beast can live upon them. On both sides of these mountains were vast numbers of white bears and wolves, which put us in fear of our lives; we being under continual apprehensions of their falling upon us, though perhaps these animals were as much terrified at us, as we at them; for they fled before us, some on the one hand, and some on the other, frightened perhaps at the glittering of our arms. We were twelve hours in crossing the mountains, over which our cattle had much ado to draw us; but we at last reached the descent, and arrived at a village in Siberia, where the people had linen shirts, close buskins, and garments of bear skins, with the hair outward; but they appeared to be less barbarous

than those with whom we had lately conversed. They received us very civilly, asked whence we came, and whither we were going: having resolved their questions, we bought all their skins for ready money, feasted with them on dried bears and wolf's flesh, rice cakes and brandy, and then slept upon bear skins, in houses built after the manner of the Laplanders.

We no sooner awaked than we mounted our sledges, and set forward for Papinowgorod, which we reached in about twenty hours. The governor, hearing of our arrival, sent for us to come to his castle, to inquire into our country and business. Upon which we immediately waited on him, and our accomptant, who understood the Muscovite language, answered all his questions to his satisfaction. Being informed that we were Danish merchants, who travelled so far to buy furs, he treated us in a very friendly manner, and, as a mark of respect, sent for his wife to entertain us; upon which she came, with a bottle of brandy in one hand, and a silver cup in the other, followed by a maid-servant with a plate of gingerbread. We saluted her, according to the custom of the country, by bowing our heads; when untying the knot of her shift-sleeve, she let it fall to the ground, and the super-cargo taking it up, we each of us kissed it. She then furled it up again with her left hand, and taking the bottle and cup, which she had set down to perform this ceremony, gave each of us a bumper of brandy and a piece of gingerbread, standing all the while near her husband at the end of the table. She then withdrew, and the governor regaled us with an excellent supper.

This entertainment being over, we were con-

ducted to lodgings prepared for us in the castle, and, considering the country, lay in very good beds. Having slept about seven hours we arose, of which the governor being informed by one of his servants, got up, and came to see us, bringing a bottle of brandy with him, and one of his domestics having another, filled a large cup for a morning's draught. We each of us drank one, and then the governor asking if we would buy his skins, our supercargo said that he would, if he liked them, and could agree on the price. His furs were extremely well chosen, and though they were valued much higher than any we had met with in all our travels, they were the best worth our money. These being bought and paid for, he ordered one of his men to call some of the inhabitants, who had a quantity to sell; and while our supercargo was dealing with the governor and his neighbours, I took a turn about the town.

Papinowgorod is commodiously situated in a small plain, in the midst of a fruitful country, surrounded with high mountains; and near it runs a large river, well stocked with fish. The houses are low, and meanly built of wood, with the chinks stopped with moss, and the streets are paved with timber laid close together. The people of fashion wear a long cloth coat, which reaches down to their toes, with very close sleeves of another colour, under which they have breeches and stockings of the same cloth. Their shoes, or rather boots, are of blue, red, or yellow leather, buttoned on the top; and upon their heads they wear cloth caps, lined and bordered with ermine, sable, or black fox skins. The women are fair, beautiful, and somewhat fat; their hair is of a light chesnut colour, hanging down to their waists, and their head-dress is an oval cap; their upper

garment, like the men's, hangs down to their feet, and is made of red, blue, or violet coloured cloth, and lined with white fox skin or sable. They have round their waists a broad girdle adorned with pearls; their shifts are made of fine calico, with sleeves all ruffled up from the wrist to the shoulders, some of which are five ells long, and this bundle prevents their using the arms of their robes, which therefore hang useless, and are only pinned on. Their shoes are made of Russia leather.

The people of Siberia are grave, robust, swift, and very dexterous at shooting with the cross-bow; but they are ignorant, churlish, and jealous of their wives, whom they generally lock up; and even if they do not, none of them dare quit their rooms without their husband's leave. The religion of this province is called Nicholation. Their judicial proceedings are terminated with great expedition; for all their courts of justice are courts of equity. There are no petty-foggers either here or in Russia, who, under the pretence of relieving the innocent, and succouring the distressed, rob the poor, and enrich themselves with the spoils of the widow and the fatherless. False witnesses are most severely punished, as are also traitors and robbers; murderers are prosecuted by the friends of the deceased, and adultery in either sex is punished by stoning the guilty to death.

When we had bought up all the furs we liked at Papinowgorod, we found we had enough to load a sledge and a half; and having still some tobacco, and about 5,000 ducats left, our supercargo resolved to proceed farther, in order to purchase more, and to return to our ships through Samojedia. As our brandy fell short, we bought a supply of the best

the governor had; we agreed with him for provisions sufficient to last us twelve days, and for rein-deer to carry us to the end of our journey. When we had concluded all our dealings with him, and paid our money, we were forced to have a drunken-bout at parting, without which there is no getting away. We eat and drank for ten hours together, and then took our rest for eight more; after which we arose, harnessed our rein-deer, loaded our sledges with our merchandize and provisions, and took leave of the governor.

We proceeded seventeen hours, all the way buying up what furs we could find of the Siberians; and having in six hours more crossed the Riphean mountains, we entered Samojedia, a desolate mountainous country, full of juniper-trees, pines and firs. It abounds in moss as well as snow; and every moment, to our no small terror, we met with white bears, wolves and foxes.

On our ascending mount Stolphen, whence arises the river Borsagatz, we came to eight or nine houses, where we stopped, in order to rest ourselves and our cattle, and exchanged with the inhabitants brandy for white and black wolf and fox skins, castor and otter skins. They had several dozen of sables, which they would not sell upon any terms, though they were assured by our Borandian guide that there was no manner of danger, we being traders, who were going to our ships, and could not be discovered before we reached the coast, because we were not to pass through any place where there were officers empowered to search for prohibited goods. All our arguments, however, had no effect, till we drank them down; when our brandy rendering them courageous, they brought out their sables, and sold

us the best and the greatest quantity we had picked up in our whole journey.

We staid to rest ourselves in one of the chief huts of the village; the master of the house, with his wife and children, and we, lying all together on bear skins. Having slept four or five hours, I was awoke by the noise made by our host to raise his family, all of whom went out, when, having the curiosity to follow them at a little distance, I observed them fall down on their knees behind the cottage, lifting up their hands and eyes to adore the sun.

The people of Samojedia are shorter and thicker than either the Laplanders or the Borandians. They have large heads, their faces and noses are flat, they are of a swarthy complexion, and have scarcely any hair. They wear a round fur cap, and a white bear's skin coat, that reaches down to their knees, and is fastened round the waist with a girdle four inches broad; they also wear breeches, shoes and stockings made of the same skin, with the hair outwards; and instead of a cloak they hang a black bear's skin over their shoulders, the feet dangling at the four corners: this skin is placed more on the left side than on the right, to leave the right arm at liberty in the management of their bows and arrows, and upon this skin they tie their quiver. They also wear upon their feet a kind of skates, two feet long, with which they slide with prodigious swiftness over the snow.

The Samojedian women have more disagreeable persons than the men. They are capable of enduring great hardships, and take care to breed up their children in using their bows with dexterity. They are dressed like the men, only their upper garment is a little longer; and all the difference in their

head-dress is, that the women have a lock of twisted hair hanging down on their shoulders, at the end of which is a knot, formed of a long slip taken from the bark of a tree, which hangs down as low as their heels, and this is all their finery. They hunt as well as the men, and are, in the same manner, armed with bows and arrows. They are constant to their husbands; and if either man or woman is found guilty of adultery, the criminal is immediately stoned to death.

Having traversed Samojedia, and exchanged our money and goods for skins, we returned, and in twelve days after our departure from Papinowgorod, reached the coast of Borandia, without meeting with any adventure worth notice. Upon that coast our ships had waited for us at an appointed place, where we put all our merchandise on board, paid off our Borandian guide, and embarked.

CHAP. V.

The author sails to Nova Zembla. An account of the sea-horse fishery in the straits of Weygatz. Some of the crew land in a small island in these straits, and catch a number of penguins. Four Zemblians taken; a description of their persons and dresses.

HAVING weighed anchor, we sailed from the coast of Borandia with a fair wind, and the next day, in the afternoon, cast anchor near the coast of Zembla, when we observed upon the shore, about thirty persons with quivers on their backs, worshipping on their knees the setting sun. Our master and supercargo immediately consulted what course it would be proper for us to take, to come at the speech of them. They thought them more wild

than any savages they had yet seen, and thinking it would be difficult to persuade them to deal with us, it was resolved to send out three long-boats, with ten men well armed in each, that they might be able to defend themselves in case they should be attacked. I was one of the number dispatched upon this service; but when we were about a quarter of a mile from the land, the savages arose from their knees, discharging their arrows at us, and then fled with surprising swiftness, but being at a great distance when they let fly at us, they did not do us the least harm.

We no sooner reached the shore than we landed, and pursued them to the place whither we thought they had fled, in hopes of making some of them our prisoners; but we found it impossible, though we followed them till we approached some mountains covered with snow. However, we continued to advance farther into the country, till we came to a rising ground, upon which was erected a piece of wood, very wretchedly cut into the figure of a man, and before it two Zemblians on their knees, with their arms lying by them. They were worshipping this idol, who was called Fetizo, as the others on the shore had been adoring the sun: but the moment they beheld us, they fled into an adjoining wood of firs, and as night approached, we thought it would be in vain to pursue them, and therefore returned to the ships.

From thence we steered towards the Straits of Weygatz, to catch sea-horses; and having proceeded about six leagues, kept near the shore, and put out our long-boats, with eight harpooners in each besides the rowers. We were three days without catching any thing, but at last observed two

great fish approaching us, one of which had a large horn in his forehead; when the boats coming near, the harpoons were thrown at him on all sides, and the ropes to which they were fastened let loose, after which the men hastily retired, to be out of his reach while he was struggling. At last the fish swimming above the water, which was a proof of his weakness, the men in the boats drew him to them by the ropes fastened to the harpoons, and then cutting off his head, threw the body into the sea, it being neither fit for food nor oil. This was a sea-horse, which is taken only for the sake of his teeth and horn, the former being more valuable than those of the elephant, because they are whiter, and not so apt to turn yellow. The horn of this sea-horse was ten feet long, and very heavy; from the root, which was as thick as a man's shoulder, it gradually decreased, wreathing handsomely, till it ended in a sharp point. One of the boats coming too close to the other fish, in order to make sure of it, and not retreating with sufficient speed, was unhappily overturned by his tail, with which he lashed the boat with prodigious fury, on his feeling the harpoon; by this means two of the men were drowned, notwithstanding which the fish was taken; but though this was no recompence for the loss of our sailors, yet it was a good prize, the teeth being larger and whiter than the former.

We were four days cruising about before we met with any more, and were preparing to change our station, when we perceived four of the same fish, that seemed larger than those we had caught; three of them we took, but none of them had any horn. Twelve hours after we discovered five more, but three of them escaped, one of which had a horn.

Two hours after we espied three more, one of which we took, each of whose great teeth weighed twenty-nine pounds. Two days after we caught five more, among which was one with a horn, like that of the first we caught, but it was neither so heavy nor so large, it being scarce seven feet long.

We staid there five days longer, and perceiving no more fish, took the advantage of a north-north-east wind to sail towards Weygatz, in hopes of passing those straits, which, if practicable, would shorten the passage to the East-Indies by three-fourths. We pursued our course pretty well for thirty-six leagues, but were unable to proceed any farther, on account of the large pieces of ice that opposed our passage, and those mountains covered with snow, which lie at the mouth of the Frozen Sea, and are known by the name of Pater-Nosters. Hence these straits have received the name of Weygatz, which signifies impassable.

We now came to an anchor on the eastern coast of Zembla, when one of the seamen landing, a bear came behind him, and struck him down with his paw; and had we not happily seen it, and shot the bear dead on the spot, he would certainly have been devoured. This accident deterred the rest of the mariners from venturing on land.

Shortly after three bears swam to the sides of the ships, and strove to come on board: but though we cut off the paws of one of them with our hatchets, and shot the other with a musket, the third, while we were dispatching these, mounted the side of the ship, and got upon deck, when a sailor who was near, cried out, for the bear was just at his heels; but we all took up the first offensive weapons that came to our hands, as oars and pieces of

timber, with which we knocked him down and dispatched him, while others shot at and killed two others that were swimming towards us. This slaughter we thought would have hindered any more attempting to board us, but we were mistaken; for about four or five hours afterwards, ten or twelve more came as far towards us on the ice as they could, and then took to the water, making directly for the ships, when we used our arms so successfully, that not one of them escaped. However, many others still approaching from the high mountains, and being unwilling to continue exposed to such hourly attacks, we weighed and stood over to the west coast of Zembla, where we first anchored, and got clear of the Straits of Weygatz, with an easterly wind, in fifteen hours, but not without great danger of running upon the rocks of ice that lay in our way.

There is an island at the mouth of this strait, which appeared very green, and is covered with fir and juniper-trees. Some of the sailors going on shore, saw a bird so large as to be scarcely able to fly; and giving at their return an account of what they had seen, I desired leave to land, with about forty men, to hunt these birds and make discoveries, which being granted, we killed about sixty of them, some of which we shot, and others we knocked down with clubs, and afterwards carried them on board. These birds, which are not much taller than swans, though a great deal larger, are called penguins. They have a sharp beak, under which begins a gullet that reaches down to their breast, in the form of an urinal, only it is larger; and in this bag they store their provisions, which they take out to eat as they have occasion. They are of a

brown colour, and have webbed feet, like a goose. Their flesh is palatable, and tastes like that of a wild-duck, only it is fatter. We eat heartily of it, and had not such a feast in all our voyage; but before we dressed these penguins, we were obliged to take off the skin, which is very tough. Having staid at this island two days, we sailed with a south-east wind, and in about thirty hours arrived at a cape, near which we again found the Zemblians worshipping the sun.

As his Danish Majesty was very desirous of having a perfect account of the riches and nature of Zembla, and for the more easy acquiring of that knowledge, had ordered our officers to bring off some of the natives, we resolved, if possible, to put this order in execution, and thirty persons, of whom I was one, were ordered to land in the long-boat; but we had scarcely got over the ship's side before we discovered a Zemblian in his boat, about half a league off land, who, seeing us make towards him, rowed so fast that it was impossible to get up with him; and as soon as he set his foot on shore, throwing his boat upon his shoulder, ran so swiftly, that we perceived we should find it very difficult to overtake him; nor did he seem encumbered either with his boat or a dart he had in his hand. We, however, landed, and pursued him towards a hill which we saw him mount, but he was quickly out of sight; we therefore gave over all thoughts of taking him, but as we were rowing back to our ships we perceived two Zemblians farther out at sea, and they observing us at the same time, rowed towards the promontories and rocks on the coast to hide themselves; but we plied our oars so briskly, that we surrounded them in four boats, as they

were rowing with all their strength towards a rock, when finding no possibility of making their escape, they set up a howling that was the most hideous I had ever heard. They were a man and woman, dressed in clothes made of the skin of the sea-calf, with the hair outwards; and their waistcoats were formed of two skins joined together, the tails dangling, the one before and the other behind, almost as low as their knees: their drawers were very straight. The man seemed to be about fifty years of age, and, though he had no hair on his head, he had a round beard of a chesnut colour. The woman, who seemed to be about thirty, had her ears and nose bored, and pendants of blue stones hanging at them; her hair was twisted, and hung on her shoulders. Their features were extremely disagreeable, and they were both of them shorter and squatter than either the Laplanders, Samojedians, Borandians or Siberians. They had squeaking voices and stinking breaths; the latter was probably caused by their eating of flesh without salt, or fish with train-oil.

We soon took them into one of the boats, and towed that in which we found them, by fastening it to one of our own boats. It was made of the rib-bones of fishes, very artfully joined, and neatly covered with fish-skins sewed together. It was sixteen feet in length, and two feet and a half broad. They were shut up in it as high as their waists, by having a fish-skin drawn over it, with two holes that fitted their waists, so that a drop of water could not get into it. They therefore exposed themselves in the foulest weather, to all the dangers of the sea, without the least fear of foundering. But though we made all the friendly signs we could to

them, in order to induce them to let us know their habitations, it was impossible for us to learn any thing from them.*

We now resolved to try whether we could not get some others of these people into our power, who were less stupid and more communicative: upon which thirty of us landed again, taking several days provisions with us, and went in two companies, well armed, about one hundred yards distance from each other, and having hid ourselves in caverns under the rocks, posted sentinels in proper places, to discover if any savages approached, whom we intended to seize, and to force them to show us their habitations. We were two days without seeing any of the natives, but at last one of our sentinels gave us notice, that two of them were descending a hill towards the sea side, on which we divided ourselves into companies at proper distances, and the poor Zemblians soon entered the snare, without suspecting any treachery, till one of our companions discharging his fuzee, we all made our appearance, and the savages, finding it impossible to fly, were easily taken. Their garments were of penguins skins, with the feathers outwards. They had each a pair of straight breeches which reached to their knees, and a kind of waistcoat, the sleeves of which reached only to their elbows, the rest of their arms being naked. The feathers were picked from their waistcoats before and behind. They had caps in the form of a sugar-loaf, and stockings made of the skin of a sea-calf, with the hair outwards. Though their dresses were the same, yet we soon perceived that one of them was a man, and

* It evidently appears that those people are of the same race with the Esquimaux of Hudson's Bay.

the other a woman. The man seemed to be about twenty-four years of age; his face was very broad, his nose flat, and his complexion swarthy; he had neither beard on his chin, nor hair on his head; at his back hung a quiver filled with arrows; on his shoulder he carried an axe, and in his other hand held a bow. The woman seemed to be about twenty, and held a dart in her hand; her hair hung down in two twisted locks on each shoulder; she had blue streaks on her forehead and chin, and her ears and nostrils had holes bored in them, in which were fish-bone rings, to which were fastened blue stones, those in her ears being as large as filberts, and those in her nose no bigger than peas.

We tried all the ways we could think of to oblige them to show us where they dwelt, but without effect. They were as resolute and sullen as those we had taken in the boat, and we carried them on board without making any farther discoveries. When we brought them to their fellow-prisoners, we found that, notwithstanding their being so differently dressed, they knew each other. These four Zemblians seemed the most despicable part of the human species I had ever seen. Their features were extremely disagreeable, and when they walked they waddled like ducks. We could never make them eat any bread, salt meat or fish, nor drink any beer, they being used to nothing but water; they sometimes tasted our brandy, but had a great aversion to the smell of tobacco. The wood-work of their bows and darts was very heavy, and of a red brown colour, but that of the arrows was much lighter and paler. Their needles, the point of their darts, arrows, and all their other sharp instruments, were made of fish-bones.

CHAP. VI.

The author sails to the coast of Greenland, lands in Iceland, and ascends Mount Hecla, where he is exposed to great danger by an irruption of that burning mountain. Other curiosities in the island described, with some account of the inhabitants. The author sails on his return to Denmark, and arrives at Copenhagen.

THE summer was now far advanced, it being the latter end of August, and the cold increasing, we began to think of returning home, and therefore weighing, held on a south-west course; but the wind shifting to the southward, obliged us to make the coast of Greenland, where we dropped anchor near a French and Dutch fleet employed in the whale fishery. The ships seldom lie far from the shore, for the whales, which are caught in the same manner as we took the sea-horses, are, like them, commonly found near the land. When they are caught they are cut to pieces, and the blubber being taken out, is put into large kettles, and melted to oil, in huts erected for that purpose along the sea shore. During our stay here, I saw one whale that yielded three hundred and fifty pounds weight of good bone, which, together with its oil, must have afforded a very considerable profit. Our arrival in this place proved very fortunate for our Zemblian prisoners, who had for some time pined away for want of whale oil, they being able to eat nothing, unless it was soaked in it, and our store was entirely exhausted; but for their sakes we here took in a fresh supply.

Having staid two days on this coast, we took the advantage of a north-east wind, and proceeded on

our voyage; but being overtaken by a storm, we steered to the coast of Iceland. On our approaching that island, we heard a dreadful noise at land, like the firing of several pieces of ordnance, after which we saw flames issue in abundance from Mount Hecla. We found so many rocks on the coast, and the sea was so extremely rough, that we were afraid of venturing within a league of the land; but we steered to Cape Heri, where we anchored in safety.

Soon after a strong party of us landed at the village of Heri, whence we proceeded to Kirkebar, a large town, where we met eight or nine Danish merchants, who were much surprised at seeing us there, and entertained us very cordially with dishes of fresh meat, good bread, and excellent wine. From them we learned, that the day before the island had so terrible an earthquake, that they expected to be swallowed up alive.

Our captain, supercargo, and others of our company, intimating to the chief merchant at Kirkebar, that they were desirous of seeing whatever was worth notice in the island, he very obligingly ordered horses to be got ready for all of us, that were willing to go into the country; and I saying I would make one of them, eight of us mounted, while the rest, having less curiosity, chose to stay and drink at this merchant's house. This gentleman gave us one of his servants, and two Icelanders, to be our guides, and also furnished us with a horse-load of provisions. We travelled two days in rugged and unfrequented roads, when we found ourselves about five miles from Mount Hecla, and perceived the ground strewed with ashes and pumice-stones, over which we passed to the foot of the mountain. The

weather being now very serene and calm, and seeing no flames issue out of the volcano, we resolved to go up to the top; but being informed by our guides, that if we went farther, we should be in danger of falling into pits, where we might be suffocated with the fumes caused by the fire in the bowels of the earth, and that it would be impossible to pull us out, all our company, except myself, declared against proceeding: but I told them, that if they would stay for me, I would go up alone, and they promising that they would, I alighted and prepared to ascend the mountain, when one of the Danish merchants whom we met at Kirkebar, and who accompanied us out of curiosity, said he would go along with me.

Having given our horses to our guides, who staid behind with the rest of our company, we boldly ventured forward, resolving to reach the top of Hecla, and in a short time saw a flight of crows and vultures, that had their nests on the top of the mountain. When we had ascended about half a league, we felt the ground shake under us, and heard a terrible noise in the bowels of the earth, which seemed ready to burst open. At the same time there appeared on all sides chinks, out of which issued blueish flames, that had a strong suffocating smell of burning brimstone. This made us turn back, for fear of being burned to ashes; but we had scarce proceeded thirty yards, before a black cloud of smoke ascended out of the mountain, obscured the light of the sun, and covered us so thick that we could not see each other. Our fears increased every step we took; for behind us came flames of fire, showers of ashes and pumice-stones, that fell as thick as hail, and this dreadful storm was attended

with horrible noises. We, besides, every moment expected that the earth would open and swallow us up, which added wings to our flight, and we ran as fast as we were able, to escape the danger to which we had exposed ourselves by our idle curiosity; and indeed our fears made us so nimble, that in a quarter of an hour we got to the bottom of the mountain.

Our companions, on seeing us come down so fast, burst into a fit of laughter, which was soon increased by their observing us to be as black as if we had been covered with soot; their mirth, however, soon abated, for on approaching them we both dropped down speechless. They immediately came to our assistance, and by rubbing our temples, nostrils and hands, with vinegar, brought us to ourselves, and then revived us with a cup of canary; upon which, recovering our strength and spirits, we related what had happened, and they were rejoiced at our escape.

We now left the foot of the mountain, in order to see two springs at ten or twelve miles distance, one of which is always boiling, and the other so cold, that it is said to turn every thing put into it into iron. When we had proceeded about one hundred yards from the foot of Mount Hecla, we found a pumice-stone as large as a hogshead, which had been lately thrown out of the volcano; when our guides, seing us astonished at its prodigious size, said they had seen several much bigger, which ten men could not stir; and that instead of flames, ashes and pumice-stones, the volcano sometimes casts up water, at others nothing but flames, and at others again, nothing but ashes or stones.

After three hours riding we drew near to the

springs, which are thirty yards distance from each other. We came first to the cold one, when putting in a small cane I had in my hand, I was surprised, on taking it out again, to see the end which touched the bottom metamorphosed into iron.* From thence we went to the boiling fountain, from which we saw a number of what appeared to be fowls, of a red colour, and about the size of ducks, playing in the water; when being pleased with the novelty of the sight, we stood for some time looking at them, but on our approaching nearer they dived to the bottom; but we had no sooner left it, than they appeared again playing on the surface. Our guides informed us, that they always continue upon the water when nobody is in sight, and constantly dive to the bottom as soon as they see any person approach.

From this spring we travelled to the sea side, within half a league of which we heard very disagreeable sounds, that were not unlike the cries of persons complaining. Our ignorant guides, who were natives of the country, would fain have persuaded us, that they were the lamentations of the damned, who, when the devil had roasted them in the flames of Hecla, cooled them by plunging them amongst the ice on the coast; and that they were thus alternately tormented, by making them feel the extremes of heat and cold. But though we gave no credit to this Iceland tradition, we resolved to see those shoals of ice, which bound that part of the island and no other. These, we were told by our guides, come upon the coast in June, and go away in September. On our arrival at the coast,

* The author's mistake probably arose from the cane being incrusted with a stony concretion, resembling iron rust.

we found, that these imaginary complaints were only occasioned by the agitation of the ice and water, driven violently against the rocks by the wind.

Having seen all that was worth observation, we returned to Kirkebar, where we arrived on the 16th of September, and having staid a few hours in the town, went on board, when we found the governor of the island, accompanied by the bishop of Scel-tholt, who, hearing that we had been at Zembla, came to see our ships, and to discourse with us.

As Iceland abounds in rich pastures, it produces great plenty of all sorts of cattle; and the beasts that feed in these pastures are so fond of an herb called caitophe, that the inhabitants are obliged to prevent their eating too much of it, for fear they should burst themselves: but though the fields look green and pleasant, yet the north-east wind, which blows here with great violence, is so very cold, that no wheat, or any other grain fit to make bread, will grow there, for it either kills the seed, or the corn while it is green.

The Icelanders for the most part dwell in caverns hewn out of the rocks, and the rest live in huts, built after the manner of those in Lapland, some with wood and others with fish-bones, covered with turf; and both they and their cattle lie under the same roof. Their beds are composed of hay or straw, upon which they lie in their clothes, with skins upon them, and make but one bed for the whole family. Both the men and women have very disagreeable persons; they are swarthy, and dressed in coats made of the skins of the sea-calf, with the hair outwards, and no other lining than sack-cloth: they live by fishing, and are very nasty. The food of the poor is very coarse, it consisting of a sort of

stock-fish, pounded with a stone, very bad butter and cheese, and no other drink but water, milk or whey; yet on this hard fare many of them are said to live, without the help of a physician, to a hundred and fifty years of age. Most of them pretend to witchcraft, and are said to worship the devil, under the name of Kobald, who, it is pretended, frequently appears to them under a human shape. They have also a kind of houshold god, cut out of a piece of wood with a knife, who is extremely hideous; this idol they adore privately, and hide it for fear of the Lutheran ministers, who endeavour to instruct them in the principles of Christianity.

Three days after our coming on board, we took the opportunity of a north wind, and set sail. We continued our course to the south-south-east, and at length happily arrived at Copenhagen, where, having saluted the castle, we dropped anchor, and went ashore.

His majesty being informed, on our entering the city, that we had brought some Zemblians with us, commanded us to bring them to court, which we immediately did, every person gazing at them as if they had been born in another world. The king himself admired the oddness of their dress, and the strangeness of their figures. He ordered the steward of his houshold to give directions for their being kept with care, well provided for, and taught the Danish language, hoping he might then get something out of them relating to their country, that would be beneficial to his own. He commanded us to give him an account of the several places we had visited, the manners of the people, and their way of living: and having given his majesty full satisfaction with respect to all he desired to know, we went to

wait upon our owners, in order to inform them of the markets we had met with, and what returns we had brought home, which proved highly to their advantage. Our ships were ordered up to Christian Haven, in order to be unladen, which was done in two days time; when one of the chief merchants of the company presented the king, in the name of the rest, with the two horns we had taken from the sea-horses, and his majesty received them as rarities of inestimable value; and believing that they were really the horns of the unicorn, he gave orders for their being deposited in the treasury-chamber, and in return promised to grant the company as many privileges as it was in the power of his prerogative to bestow. The merchant who presented the horns was rewarded with a chain of gold, with his majesty's picture hanging to it, and with a licence to trade custom-free for a certain term of years.

THE TRAVELS

OF

MONSIEUR MAUPERTUIS,

AND HIS ASSOCIATES OF THE ROYAL ACADEMY OF SCIENCES,

MADE BY ORDER OF THE FRENCH KING, TO DETERMINE THE FIGURE OF THE EARTH AT THE POLAR CIRCLE.

CHAP. I.

They attempt to make their observations on the coast of the gulf of Bothnia, but are disappointed. A description of several mountains, woods, and rivers in Lapland in summer. A mountain on fire.

IN order to give a clear idea of this undertaking, it is necessary to observe, that the great Sir Isaac Newton and Mr. Huygens had, from different observations, concluded that the earth was flatted at the poles; but upon measuring the whole area of the meridian that passes through France, and from other operations, it was concluded by several of the members of the academy of sciences at Paris, that the terraqueous globe was prominent at the poles. Hence the members became divided in their sentiments, and perplexed by their own inquiries upon so important a subject, that was justly considered as having a real influence upon astronomy and navigation. To put an end to this dispute, the king of France resolved that it should be finally decided; and, to the great joy of the academy, an order was dispatched from court, for a certain number of the members to go and measure the first degree of the meridian at the equator. These, says Monsieur

Maupertuis, set out a whole year before us. The rest were commissioned northward, to measure the remotest degree they could reach; and the same alacrity, the same zeal to serve their country, appeared in those who were to endure the rage of the equator sun, and those that were to freeze beneath the polar circle. The travels in the north were wrote by Monsieur Maupertuis, and we shall give them in his manner.

The company destined for the north was composed of four academicians, Messrs. Clairaut, Camus, Le Monnier and myself; the abbe Outhier, and M. Celsius, the celebrated professor of astronomy at Upsal, also assisted at all our operations, and their abilities and advice were of singular use to us.

No sooner was the vessel that carried us arrived at Stockholm, than we resolved, without loss of time, to set out for the bottom of the gulf of Bothnia, where we might judge which side of the gulf was proper for our operations, better than we could do by trusting to our charts. Nothing could retard us; neither the frightful stories they told us at Stockholm, nor the goodness of his Swedish majesty, who, notwithstanding the orders he had given in our behalf, told us oftener than once, that it was not without a sensible concern he saw us pursue so desperate an undertaking.

We arrived at Tornea time enough to see the sun perform his course for several days together without setting; a sight which strikes with wonder an inhabitant of the temperate zones, even though he knows it is what must necessarily happen in that climate.

We had flattered ourselves with the hopes of performing our operations upon the coast of the gulf

of Bothnia, where we should have the convenience of transporting ourselves and our instruments to the different stations by sea, and where the many advantageous points of view, from the islands in all our charts, seemed to promise us success. But when we went with great impatience to view them, all our labour served only to convince us, that this design was impracticable. The islands that line the coasts of the gulf, and the coasts themselves, which we had fancied to be so many promontories, that might furnish us with distant points of view from one to another, lay all of them so low upon the surface of the water, that at a small distance the convexity of the earth must arise between them and us: so that after several small voyages, in pursuance of our first design of making use of these islands, we were at last obliged to give it up.

We now resolved to endeavour to perform our operations upon the tops of the mountains to the northward of Tornea, though it appeared next to impossible. In the deserts of a country scarcely habitable, in that immense forest, which extends from Tornea to cape Nord, we must go through operations that are not easy, even where no convenience is wanting. There were but two ways of penetrating into these deserts, both of which we must prove; one the sailing up a river full of cataracts, the other crossing thick woods and deep marshes on foot: and, if we should be able to make our way into the country, we must, after the most painful marches, be obliged to clamber up steep rocks, and to clear the tops of mountains of the wood that would intercept our sight. In these deserts we should be forced to take up with the most wretched diet; be exposed to the flies, which in this season is so

insufferable as to drive the Laplanders and their rein-deer from their habitations, to seek shelter on the coasts of the ocean: we were, in fine, to undertake this work without knowing, or being able to inform ourselves, whether it was practicable; whether the want of one mountain might not, after all our toils, interrupt the series of our triangles; or whether it would be possible to find upon the river a base by which they might be connected. But if we should surmount all these obstacles, we should still have the labour of building observatories on the most northerly of the mountains, the trouble of carrying thither as numerous a collection of instruments as is perhaps to be seen in Europe, and of making there the nicest astronomical observations: we were, however, so far from being deterred by these difficulties, that the prospect of conquering them filled us with pleasure.

We set out from Tornea on Friday the 6th of July, 1736, with a company of Finland soldiers, and a good number of boats laden with instruments and provisions. We began our journey by sailing up the great river, which, rising in the inland parts of Lapland, pursues its course till it falls into the gulf of Bothnia, having first divided itself into two branches that form the isle of Swertzar, where is built a town of the same name, in the latitude of 65° 51′. From this day forward our only habitation was the deserts, and our time was spent on the summits of those mountains, which we were to connect by our triangles.

After a voyage of twelve hours we landed in the evening at Korpikyla, a hamlet by the river side inhabited by Finlanders; and having for some time travelled on foot across the forest, we arrived at the

bottom of a steep mountain, called Niwa, whose summit, which is a bare rock, we chose for our first station. Upon the river we had been tormented by great flies, with green heads, that fetched blood wherever they fixed: but on the top of this mountain we were pestered with several other kinds, that were still more intolerable. By good luck we found two Lapland girls tending a small herd of rein-deer, but almost hid in the smoke of a great fire they had kindled; and being told, on inquiry, that they thus defended themselves from the flies, we had immediately recourse to the same method.

On the 8th of July, at one in the morning, Mr. Camus and I left our company upon Niwa, to reconnoitre the mountains to the northward. We travelled up the river to a high mountain, called Avasaxa, where having cleared its top of the trees, we caused a signal to be built. Our signals were hollow cones, composed of a great many large trees stripped of the bark, by which means they were white enough to be visible at ten or twelve leagues distance.

This being finished, we came down from Avasaxa, and embarking on the little river of Tenglio, which falls into the great river at the foot of this mountain, we directed our course upwards to the nearest place we could find, to a mountain that seemed to suit our purpose; and from thence a march of three hours, over a morass, brought us to the foot of Horrilakero. Though extremely fatigued, we got to the top of it, and spent the night in cutting down the wood that covered it. Most part of this mountain is a reddish stone, interspersed with a kind of white crystal. Here the flies, more merciless than those at Niwa, were not to be driven off by smoke, and we were obliged, notwithstanding the excessive

heats, to wrap our heads in our cappmudes, a sort of gown made of rein-deer skins, and to cover ourselves with branches of fir, and even whole trees, which rather stifled than defended us from these troublesome insects.

Having cut down all the wood on the top of Horrilakero, and built a signal, we returned by the same road to our boats, which we had drawn upon the bank. It is indeed no hard matter to drag along, or even to carry the boats used in the rivers of Lapland. A few thin fir boards compose the whole vessel, which is so extremely light and flexible, that its beating, with all the force of the stream, against the stones, which these rivers are full of, does it no manner of harm. It is terrible to those not accustomed to it, and astonishing even to those who are, to see one of these weak vessels drive down a cataract, in a torrent of foam and stones, sometimes raised aloft in the air, and the next moment lost in the deep. A bold Finlander steers it with a long oar, while his two companions row hard to save it from the pursuing waves, that threaten every moment to overwhelm it. You may then see the whole keel by turns raised above water, and leaning only with one extremity on the top of a yielding billow, with such courage and address do these Finlanders pass the cataracts: but their art and skill in the management of their boats upon other occasions is no less remarkable; a tree, branches and all, commonly serves them both for mast and sail.

We now embarked again on the Tenglio, which brought us down into the river of Tornea, on our return to Korpikyla. At four leagues from Avasaxa we left our boats, and after an hour's walk over the forest, reached the foot of Cuitaperi, a steep moun-

tain; its summit is a rock covered with moss, affording an extensive prospect all round, and to the south taking in the gulf of Bothnia: here we erected a signal, whence we could discover all the others we had raised, and then continued our course down the river. Between Cuitaperi and Korpikyla we found some frightful catracts, where the Finlanders always set their passengers ashore; but our excessive fatigue made us chuse rather to risk the passage in the boat, than to walk only a hundred yards. At last, on the evening of the 11th, we joined our friends on the top of Niwa, who had descried our signals, but from the continual fogs were unable to make any observations.

The fogs being at length dispersed by the cold north wind, we had such a view of our several signals, as to take their angles; and having finished our observations there, we set up signals at Kakama and Pullingi, where having also made our observations, we all set out for Avasaxa.

This mountain is seated on the bank of the river, fifteen leagues from Tornea. Its ascent is difficult, lying through a wood that reaches half way up, where it is interrupted by steep slippery rocks, and afterwards continued to the very top of the mountain, before we cut down so much of it as was necessary to open our prospect. The north-east side is a most frightful rocky precipice, where the falcons build their nests. At its foot runs the Tenglio, by which it is encircled. From its summit the prospect is the most beautiful that can be imagined; to the south it is unbounded, and discovers the course of the river to a vast extent: towards the east the Tenglio may be traced in its passage through several lakes; and the view is terminated on the

north, at twelve or fifteen leagues distance, by a prodigious number of hills heaped one upon another. Upon this mountain we spent ten days, during which curiosity prompted the inhabitants to pay us frequent visits, bringing us fish and sheep, and such bad fruits as are produced in the woods.

The day we left Avasaxa we crossed the polar circle, and at three the next morning, which was the 31st of July, arrived at Turtula, a hamlet where they were cutting their little crop of barley and hay. After having travelled for some time in the woods, we embarked on a lake that brought us to the foot of Pullingi, the highest of all our mountains, and of exceeding difficult access, as well on account of its steepness, as the depth of the moss wherein we were obliged to fix our steps: however, we reached the top at six in the morning. Our stay here, which was till the 6th of August, was no less disagreeable than the ascent had been painful. We had a whole wood of the largest trees to fell, and the flies attacked us with such fury, that our soldiers of the regiment of Westro-Bothnia, a body distinguished for their bravery even in Sweden, and hardened by the greatest fatigues, were obliged to wrap up their faces, or smear them over with tar. These insects also poisoned our victuals; no sooner was a dish served, but it was quite covered over with them, while another swarm, with all the rapaciousness of birds of prey, was fluttering round, to carry off some pieces of a sheep that was dressing for us.

On the 6th of August we left this mountain to go to Pello, where we arrived the same day, after having forced our way up four cataracts. Pello is a village inhabited by a few Finlanders: in its neigh-

bourhood is Kittis, the lowest of our mountains, where was one of our signals. As we were going up, we discovered a copious spring of pure water, that resists the keenest frosts; for when we returned to Pello, about the end of winter, while the sea at the bottom of the gulf, and all the rivers, were frozen as hard as marble, we found this spring running as in summer. We had the good fortune to make our observations soon after our arrival, and the next day went to Turtula.

For a month past we had been inhabitants of the deserts, or rather of the mountain tops; the earth or rocks spread with the skins of rein-deer had been our beds; our food was chiefly fish, brought us by the Finlanders, or which we ourselves had caught, and berries or wild fruit that grew in the woods.

I left Turtula in company with Messrs. Outhier and Celsus, to cross the forest, and find the signal erected at Neimi. We set out on foot, and walked till we got to a brook, where we embarked in three little boats; but they passed with such difficulty between the stones, that we were obliged every instant to get out of them, and leap from one rock to another. The brook brought us to a lake so full of little yellowish grains, of the size of millet, that the whole water was discoloured with them. I took them to be the chrysalis of some insect, and was tempted to fancy, that this insect must be some kind of those flies that so tormented us; for I could think of no other species of animals, whose numbers corresponded to the quantity of grains that covered this large body of water. From the extremity of this lake we had to walk to another of very clear water. Here we found a boat, and putting our quadrant on board, resolved to follow it along the

side of the lake on foot: but the wood was so thick, that we were forced to cut our way through it, and were entangled at every step by the depth of the moss, and the fallen fir-trees that lay across our way.

In all these woods there are almost as many trees fallen as standing; for the soil, after it has reared them to a certain height, can no longer furnish the proper nourishment, nor is it deep enough to allow them to take firm root, whence the least blast of wind oversets them: and in all these woods nothing is to be seen but firs and birches blown down. Time reduces the wood of the latter to dust, without affecting the bark; and one is surprised to find pretty large trees that crumble upon the slightest touch. This probably gave the Swedes the hint of covering their houses with this bark, and indeed nothing could be imagined fitter for the purpose. In some provinces they cover the bark with earth, and form upon the roof a kind of garden, such as are to be seen upon the houses of Upsal. In Westro-Bothnia the bark is bound with fir-poles, that hang down on either side of the roof.

Our woods had therefore the aspect of the ruins of woods, whose trees are mostly perished; and it was through one of the most horrid of these that we now passed with twelve soldiers, who carried our baggage. Having at length reached a third lake, which was very large, and the finest water imaginable, we put our instruments and baggage on board two boats we found there, and waited their return upon the coast, when we were ferried over to the foot of Niemi.

The fine lakes that surround this mountain, and the many difficulties we encountered in getting thither, give it the air of an enchanted island in

romance. On one hand you see a grove of trees rise from a plain, smooth and level as the walks of a garden, and at such easy distances, as neither to embarrass the walks, nor the prospect of the lake that washes the foot of the mountain: on the other you have apartments of different sizes, that seem cut by art in the rocks, and to want only a regular roof to complete them. The rocks themselves are so perpendicular, so high, and so smooth, that you would take them for the walls of an unfinished palace, rather than for the work of nature. From this height we saw those vapours rise from the lake, which the people of the country call Haltios, and deem the guardian spirits of the mountains. We had been frightened with stories of bears haunting this place, but saw none; indeed it seemed rather a place of resort for fairies and genii than for those savage animals.

Having completed our observations, we left Niemi, repassed the three lakes, and got back to Turtula. We afterwards departed from thence, and set out for Horrilakero, entering the Tenglio with four boats. Its cataracts are troublesome, rather from the lowness of the water, and the great number of stones, than the rapidity of the stream. As we sailed along I was surprised to see, upon the banks of this river, roses of as lively a red as any in our gardens. We completed our observations at Horrilakero on the 17th of August, and the next day went to Oswer-Tornea, where our whole company was now assembled. But afterwards going up to Avasaxa, to take the angles that must connect the base, which we had fixed on the bank of the river, with our triangles, we saw Horrilakero all in flames. This is an accident not uncommon in these woods, where

there is no living during the summer without smoke, and where the moss and firs are so combustible, that a fire once kindled will spread over some thousand acres; and the smoke of these fires have sometimes retarded our observations as much as the thickness of the air. As this fire on Horrilakero had been, doubtless, occasioned by our not taking sufficient care to extinguish those we had kindled there, we dispatched thirty men to cut off its communication with the neighbouring woods: but three days after, when we had finished our observations at Avasaxa, Horrilakero was still burning; we saw it involved in a cloud of smoke, and the flames, which had made their way downwards, were ravaging all the forest below.

By the 9th of September, when we had passed sixty-three days in these deserts, we had finished as complete a set of triangles as we could have wished for; and an undertaking begun in a manner at random, without knowing whether it was at all practicable, had turned out so much better than expectation, that it looked as if the placing of these mountains had been at our disposal. We had built two observatories upon Kittis; in the one was a quadrant of two foot radius, a clock of Mr. Graham's, and an instrument, which we owed to the same gentleman, consisting of a telescope moveable about a horizontal axis, which was to determine the direction of our triangles with respect to the meridian: the other observatory, which was much larger, was built so near the first, that the voice of him who counted the pendulum's vibrations, could be distinctly heard from one to the other; an admirable sector, also made by Mr. Graham, took up almost the whole room. What difficulty we had in carrying up so

many instruments to the top of the mountain, I shall not mention; it is sufficient that we carried them up.

CHAP. II.

The dreadful hardships they suffered from the severity of the weather, and the beauty of the northern lights in a Lapland winter.

WE had some ice on the 29th of September, and snow on the 21st; some parts of the river were also frozen. On the 1st of November it began to freeze harder, and on the morning of the 2d the river was quite frozen up. The ice, which thawed no more, was presently covered over with snow; and this vast body of water, but a few days before full of swans and other water-fowl, was now one immense plain of ice and snow. Our work was now in a manner completed; we had only to measure our base, which was no more than surveying the distance between the two signals we had erected last summer: but this was to be done upon the ice of a river in Lapland, at the distance of above three leagues, in a country where the cold was growing every day more intense. On the 21st of December this work was begun. In this season the sun but just showed itself above the horizon towards noon; but the long twilights, the whiteness of the snow, and the meteors continually blazing in the sky, furnished us light enough to work four or five hours every day. We lodged at the house of the curate of Oswer-Tornea, and at eleven in the forenoon began our survey, and attended by so great an equipage, that the Laplanders, drawn by the novelty of the sight, came down from the neighbouring moun-

tains. We separated into two bands, each of which carried four rods of fir, each thirty feet long. I shall say nothing of the fatigues and dangers of this operation. Judge what it must be to walk in snow two feet deep, with heavy poles in our hands, which we were obliged to be continually laying on the snow, and lifting again; in a cold so extreme, that, whenever we would taste a little brandy, the only thing that could be kept liquid, our tongues and lips froze to the cup, and came away bloody: in a cold, that congealed the fingers of some of us, and threatened us with still more dismal accidents. While the extremities of our bodies were thus freezing, the rest, through excessive toil, was bathed in sweat. Brandy did not quench our thirst; we must have recourse to deep wells dug through the ice, which were shut almost as soon as opened, and from which the water would scarcely be conveyed unfrozen to our lips; thus were we forced to run the hazard of the dangerous contrast which ice-water might produce in our heated bodies.

Our work, however, advanced apace, for six days labour brought it to within about 500 toises, where we had not been able to plant our stakes soon enough: three of the gentlemen therefore undertook this office, while the abbé Outhier and I went upon a pretty extraordinary adventure. We had last summer omitted an observation of small moment; this was, taking the height of an object that we made use of in measuring on the top of Avasaxa; and to perform this, I undertook to go with a quadrant to the top of the mountain, so scrupulously careful were we that nothing should be wanting to the perfection of the work. Imagine a very high mountain, full of rocks, that lie hid in

a prodigious quantity of snow, as well as their cavities, wherein you may sink through a crust of snow as into an abyss, and the undertaking will scarce appear possible. Yet there are two ways of performing it; one by walking, or rather sliding along upon two straight boards, eight feet in length, which the Finlanders and Laplanders use to keep them from sinking into the snow; but this way of walking requires long practice: the other is by trusting yourself to a rein-deer used to such journeys.

The machine drawn by these animals is here a kind of boat, scarce large enough to hold the half of one's body. As this travelling in the snow is a kind of navigation, that the vessel may suffer the less resistance in its course, it has a sharp head, and a narrow keel, like an ordinary boat; and on this keel it tumbles so from side to side, that if a man does not take good care to balance himself, it will be every moment in danger of oversetting. It is fixed by thongs to the collar of the rein-deer, who, as soon as he finds himself on a firm, beaten road, runs with incredible fury. If you would stop him, it is to little purpose to pull a sort of rein that is tied to his horns; wild and unmanageable, it will only make him change his track, or perhaps turn upon you, and revenge himself by kicking. If this happens to a Laplander, he turns the boat over him, and uses it as a buckler against the attacks of the rein-deer; but as we were strangers to this address, we might have been killed before we could put ourselves in such a posture of defence. We had nothing to defend us with but a little stick each of us held in his hand, by way of rudder, to steer our course, and keep clear of the trunks of trees. In this manner was I to climb Avasaxa, accompanied

by the abbé Outhier, but we were attended by two men and a woman of the country, and Mr. Brunnius, their curate.

The first part of our journey was performed in a moment; for our flight over the plain beaten road, from the curate's house to the foot of the mountain, can only be compared to the flight of birds. And though the mountain, where there was no track, greatly abated the speed of our rein-deer, they got at length to the top of it, where we immediately made the observation for which we came. In the mean while our rein-deer had dug up holes in the snow, where they browzed on the moss that covers the rocks; and the Laplanders had lighted a great fire, and we presently joined them to warm ourselves. The cold was so extreme, that the heat of the fire could reach only to a very small distance. As the snow just by it melted, it was immediately froze again, forming a hearth of ice all around.

Our journey up hill had been painful, but now our concern was lest our return should be too rapid. We were now to proceed down the steep, in conveyances which, though partly sunk in the snow, slid on notwithstanding, drawn by animals, whose fury in the plain we had already tried, and who, though sinking in their bellies to the snow, would endeavour to free themselves by the swiftness of their flight. We very soon found ourselves at the bottom of the hill; a moment after this the great river was crossed, and we were returned back to the curate's house.

The next day we finished our survey, and made all possible haste back to Tornea, to secure ourselves in the best manner we were able from the increasing severity of the season. The town of

Tornea, at our arrival, on the 30th of September, had really a most frightful aspect. Its little houses were buried to the tops in snow, which, had there been any day-light, must have effectually shut it out. But the snow continually falling, or ready to fall, for the most part hid the sun, the few moments he might have appeared, at mid-day. In the month of January the cold was increased to that extremity, that Mr. Reaumur's mercurial thermometers, which at Paris, in the great frost of 1709, was thought strange to see fall to fourteen degrees below the freezing point, were now got down to thirty-seven. The spirit of wine in the others were frozen. If we opened the door of a warm room, the external air instantly converted all the vapour in it into snow, whirling it around in white vortexes. If we went abroad, we felt as if the air was tearing our breasts in pieces; and the cracking of the wood, of which the houses are built, as it split by the violence of the frost, continually alarmed us with an increase of cold. The solitude of the streets was as great as if the people had been all dead; and in this country you may often see people who have lost an arm or leg by the frost. The cold, which is always very great, sometimes increases by such violent and sudden fits, as are almost infallibly fatal to those who are so unhappy as to be exposed to it; and sometimes there rise sudden tempests of snow, that are still more dangerous. The winds seem to blow from all quarters at once, and drive about the snow with such fury, that the roads are in a moment rendered invisible. Dreadful is the situation of a person surprised in the fields by such a storm: his knowledge of the country, and even the mark he may have taken by the trees, cannot avail him: he is

blinded by the snow, and if he attempts to find his way home is generally lost. In short, during the whole winter the cold was so excessive, that on the 7th of April, at five in the morning, the thermometer was fallen to twenty divisions below the point of freezing, though every afternoon it rose two or three divisions above it: a difference in the height not much less than that which the greatest heat and cold felt at Paris usually produce in that instrument. Thus in the space of twenty-four hours, we had all the variety felt in the temperate zones in the compass of a whole year.

But though in this climate the earth is thus horrible, the heavens present the most beautiful prospects. The short days are no sooner closed, than fires of a thousand colours and figures light up the sky, as if designed to compensate for the absence of the sun in this season. These fires have not here, as in the more southern climates, any constant situation. Though a luminous arch is often seen fixed towards the north, they seem more frequently to possess the whole extent of the hemisphere. Sometimes they begin in the form of a great scarf of bright light, with its extremities upon the horizon, which, with a motion resembling that of a fishing-net, glides swiftly up the sky, preserving in this motion a direction nearly perpendicular to the meridian; and most commonly after these preludes, all the lights unite at the zenith, and form the top of a kind of crown. Arches, like those seen in France towards the north, are here frequently situated towards the south, and often towards both the north and south at once. Their summits approach each other, and the distance of their extremities widens towards the horizon. I have seen some of the oppo-

site arches, whose summits almost joined at the zenith; and both the one and the other have frequently several concentric arches beyond it. Their tops are all placed in the direction of the meridian, though with a little declination to the west, which I did not find to be constant, and which is sometimes insensible. It would be endless to mention all the different figures these meteors assume, and the various motions with which they are agitated. Their motion is most commonly like that of a pair of colours waved in the air, and the different tints of their light gives them the appearance of so many vast streamers of changeable taffeta. Sometimes they line a part of the sky with scarlet. On the 18th of December I saw a phenomenon of this kind, that, in the midst of all the wonders to which I was now every day accustomed, raised my admiration. To the south a great space of the sky appeared tinged with so lively a red, that the whole constellation of Orion looked as if it had been dipped in blood. This light, which was at first fixed, soon moved, and, changing into other colours, violet and blue, settled into a dome, whose top stood a little to the south-west of the zenith. The moon shone bright, but did not in the least efface it. In this country, where there are lights of so many different colours, I never saw but two that were red; and such are taken for presages of some great misfortune. After all, when people gaze at these phenomena with an unphilosophic eye, it is not surprising if they discover in them armies engaged, fiery chariots, and a thousand other prodigies.

During the winter we repeated many of our observations and calculations, and found the most evident proofs of the earth's being considerably

flatted at the poles. Meantime the sun came nearer, or rather no more quitted us. It was now May, when it was curious enough to see that great luminary enlighten for so long a time a whole horizon of ice, and to see summer in the heavens, while winter still kept possession of the earth. We were in the morning of that long day of several months, yet the sun with all his power wrought no change either upon the ice or snow.

On the 6th of May it began to rain, and some water appeared on the ice of the river. At noon a little snow melted, but in the evening winter resumed his rights. At length, on the 10th, the earth which had been so long hid began to appear; some high points that were exposed to the sun showed themselves, as the tops of the mountains did after the deluge, and all the fowls of the country returned. At the beginning of June, winter yielding up the earth and sea, we prepared for our departure back to Stockholm, and on the 9th some of us set out by land and others by sea. But the sequel of our adventures, and our shipwreck in the Gulf of Bothnia, says our author, belong not to the present subject.

A VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD, IN THE YEARS 1768, 1769, 1770, 1771,

BY

LIEUT. JAMES COOK,

COMMANDER OF HIS MAJESTY'S BARK THE ENDEAVOUR.

CHAP. I.

Design of the voyage. Character of lieutenant Cook. Arrival at Madeira; description of that island. Arrival at Rio de Janeiro; description of. Of the inhabitants of Terra del Fuego; fatal accident there. Description of Otaheite. Transactions with the natives. Observation of the transit of Venus. Departure from Otaheite.

IN consequence of a memorial which the Royal Society preferred to the king, in February 1768, setting forth the advantages which would be derived to science, if an accurate observation of the transit of Venus over the sun, which, according to astronomical observations, was to happen in June, 1769, was taken in some part of the South Sea, the lords-commissioners of the admiralty were directed to provide a ship, for the purpose of conveying such observers as the society should think fit to nominate, to the South Sea: and in the beginning of April following, the society received a letter from the secretary of the admiralty, informing it, that a bark of 370 tons had been fitted up for that purpose. This vessel was called the Endeavour, and the command of her given to lieutenant James Cook,

a gentleman of undoubted abilities in astronomy and navigation, who was soon after appointed by the Royal Society, with Mr. Charles Green, a gentleman who had long been assistant to Mr. Bradley, at the Royal Observatory at Greenwich, to observe the transit. Mr. (now Sir Joseph) Banks, a gentleman of large fortune, and zealously devoted to the acquisition of knowledge, in pursuit of which, no hardships were considered as severe, or danger beheld wirh dismay, accompanied by Dr. Solander, a native of Sweden, and a learned disciple of the great Linnæus, embarked on this expedition.

The Endeavour had been built for the coal-trade, and was on many accounts preferred before a ship of any other construction, for the service to which she was destined. Her complement of officers and men was, lieutenant Cook, the commander, with two lieutenants under him, a master and a boatswain, with each two mates, a surgeon and a carpenter, with each one mate, a gunner and cook, a clerk and steward, two quarter-masters, an armourer, a sail-maker, three midshipmen, forty-one able seamen, twelve marines and nine servants; in all eighty-five persons, besides the commander. Mr. Banks took with him two draughtsmen, one to delineate views and subjects, the other to paint such objects of natural history as might offer, together with a secretary and four servants, two of whom were negroes. She was victualled for eighteen months, took on board ten carriage and twelve swivel guns, with good store of ammunition, and other necessaries. By the instructions given to the commander, after the astronomical observation should be made, he was to prosecute the design of making discoveries in the South Sea. The voyage

was undertaken with great advantages, by the opportune arrival of captain Wallis, not many weeks before they sailed; for by this means, King George's Island, which he had discovered, and which has been since better known by its primitive name of Otaheite, was pointed out as the most eligible spot for making the observation.

Mr. Cook, who was about to display his uncommon talents in the most advantageous manner, was then in the forty-second year of his age. He had from his youth been trained to the sea, by serving in the coal-trade. At the commencement of hostilities with France, in the year 1755, he entered into the king's service, and served under Sir Hugh Palliser, who soon saw his merit, and introduced him on the quarter-deck. Three years after, he had risen to be master of the Northumberland, the flagship of lord Colville, when he commanded the fleet on the coast of America. While in this capacity, during a hard winter, he first read Euclid; and applied himself to the study of the mathematics and astronomy, without any other assistance than what a few books, and his own natural genius and industry afforded him. His great merit caused Sir Charles Saunders, who succeeded to the command in chief, to entrust to him the superintendance of most of the important naval services. He it was who piloted the boats to the attack of Montmorency; he conducted the embarkation to the heights of Abraham, examined the passage, and laid buoys for the security of the large ships, in proceeding up the river. The courage and address which he displayed in these services, gained him the warm patronage of Sir Charles Saunders and lord Colville. At the conclusion of the war, he was appointed to survey

the Gulf of St. Laurence, and the coasts of Newfoundland, in which service he was engaged until the year 1767, when he was fixed upon by Sir Edward Hawke, who then presided at the Admiralty Board, to command the present expedition.

The Endeavour sailed on the 30th of July, 1768, and on the 2d of September made the land, between Cape Finisterre and Cape Ortegal, on the coast of Gallicia, in Spain. During this course, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander observed many marine animals, of which no naturalist had hitherto taken notice; particularly a new species of the oniscus, which was found adhering to the Medusa-pelagica; and an animal of an angular figure, about three inches long, and one thick, with a hollow passing quite through it, and a brown spot at one end, which they conjectured might be its stomach; four of these adhered together by their sides when they were taken, so that at first they were thought to be one animal; but upon being put into a glass of water, they soon separated, and swam about very briskly. These animals are of a new genus, to which Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander gave the name of dagysa, from the likeness of one species of them to a gem: several specimens of them were taken adhering together, sometimes to the length of a yard or more, and shining in the water with very beautiful colours. Another animal of a new genus they also discovered, which shone in the water with colours still more beautiful and vivid, and which indeed exceeded in variety and brightness any thing that they had ever seen: the colouring and splendour of these animals were equal to those of an opal, and from their resemblance to that gem, the genus was called carcinium-opalinum. One of these

lived several hours in a glass of salt water, swimming about with great agility, and at every motion displaying a change of colours almost infinitely various. We caught also among the rigging of the ship, when we were at the distance of about ten leagues from Cape Finisterre, several birds, which have not been described by Linnæus; they were supposed to have come from Spain, and our gentlemen called the species, motacilla velificans, as they said none but sailors would venture themselves on board a ship that was going round the world; one of them was so exhausted, that it died in Mr. Banks's hand, almost as soon as it was brought to him. It was thought extraordinary that no naturalist had hitherto taken notice of the dagysa, as the sea abounds with them not twenty leagues from the coast of Spain; but, unfortunately for the cause of science, there are very few of those who traverse the sea, that are either disposed or qualified to remark the curiosities of which nature has made it the repository.

On the 12th we discovered the islands of Porto Santo and Madeira, and on the next day anchored in Funchiale road. When the island of Madeira is first approached from the sea, it has a very beautiful appearance; the sides of the hills being entirely covered with vines, almost as high as the eye can distinguish; and the vines are green when every kind of herbage, except where they shade the ground, and here and there by the sides of a rill, is entirely burned up, which was the case at this time.

The next day we went on shore, when Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went in search of natural curiosities; but it was the worst season in the year for that purpose. The soil is very rich; and there is such a

difference of climate, that the hills produce almost spontaneously walnuts, chesnuts and apples, and in the town there are many plants, which are natives of the East or West-Indies; so that there is scarcely a single object of luxury, either in Europe or the Indies, that might not be produced here. The corn is of an excellent quality, and the mutton, beef and pork very good.

The town of Funchiale is situated in the bottom of a bay, and though larger than the extent of the island seems to deserve, is very indifferently built. The churches are loaded with ornaments. Some of the convents are in a better taste, especially that of the Franciscans, which is plain, simple, and neat in the highest degree. The infirmary, in particular, drew our attention, as a model which might be introduced in other countries with great advantage. It consisted of a long room, on one side of which are the windows, and an altar for the convenience of administering the sacrament to the sick: the other side is divided into wards, each of which is just big enough to contain a bed, and neatly lined with gally-tiles; behind these wards, and parallel to the room in which they stand, there runs a long gallery, with which each ward communicates by a door, so that the sick may be separately supplied with whatever they want, without disturbing their neighbours. In this convent there is also a singular curiosity of another kind; a small chapel, the whole lining of which, both sides and ceiling, is composed of human sculls and thigh bones; the thigh bones are laid across each other, and a scull is placed in each of the four angles. We visited the good fathers of this convent on a Thursday evening, just before supper-time, and they received us with great politeness;

"We will not ask you," said they, "to sup with us, because we are not prepared; but if you will come to-morrow, though it is a fast with us, we will have a turkey roasted for you." This invitation, which showed a liberality of sentiment not to have been expected in a convent of Portuguese friars at this place, gratified us much, though it was not in our power to accept it. We visited also a convent of nuns, dedicated to Santa Clara, and the ladies did us the honour to express a particular pleasure in seeing us there.

Having taken in provisions and water, we set sail between the 18th and 19th of September; on the 21st we saw the islands called Salvages, to the north of the Canaries; and on the 23d saw the Peak of Teneriffe. The next day we came into the north-east trade wind; and on the 30th saw Bona Vista, one of the Cape de Verd islands. During this course we saw great numbers of flying fish, which from the cabin windows appear beautiful beyond imagination. As our stock of provisions began to run short, on the 6th of November, I determined to put into Rio de Janeiro. On the 8th we made the coast of Brasil, and on the 13th entered the harbour. We lay here something more than three weeks, watched with the utmost precaution by the Portuguese, but having with much difficulty procured a sufficient supply of necessaries, we set sail on the 7th of December, and entered the Strait of Le Maire on the 14th of January. We anchored in the bay of Good Success, on the 15th, where I went on shore, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander; thirty or forty of the natives soon made their appearance, and a mutual good-will being produced, our parties joined, and three of them accompanied us to the

ship. They eat some bread and beef, but would not swallow a drop of wine or spirits: they put the glass to their lips, but having tasted the liquor, returned it, with strong expressions of disgust.

On the 16th, early in the morning, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, with their attendants and servants, and two seamen to assist in carrying the baggage, accompanied by Mr. Monkhouse the surgeon, and Mr. Green the astronomer, set out from the ship, with a view to penetrate as far as they could into the country, and return at night. The hills, when viewed at a distance, seemed to be partly a wood, partly a plain, and above them a bare rock. Mr. Banks hoped to get through the wood, and made no doubt, but that beyond it, in a country which no botanist had ever yet visited, he should find alpine plants which would abundantly compensate for his labour. They entered the wood at a small sandy beach, a little to the westward of the watering-place, and continued to ascend the hill, through the pathless wilderness, till three o'clock, before they got a near view of the places which they intended to visit. Soon after they reached what they had taken for a plain, but, to their great disappointment, found it a swamp, covered with low bushes of birch, about three feet high, interwoven with each other, and so stubborn that they could not be bent out of the way; it was therefore necessary to lift the leg over them, which at every step was buried ancle deep in the soil. To aggravate the pain and difficulty of such travelling, the weather, which hitherto had been very fine, much like one of our bright days in May, became gloomy and cold, with sudden blasts of a most piercing wind, accompanied with snow. They pushed forward, however, in good spirits,

notwithstanding their fatigue, hoping the worst of the way was past, and that the bare rock, which they had seen from the tops of the lower hills, was not more than a mile before them; but when they had got over about two-thirds of this woody swamp, Mr. Buchan, one of Mr. Banks's draughtsmen, was unhappily seized with a fit. This made it necessary for the whole company to halt, and as it was impossible that he could go any farther, a fire was kindled, and those who were most fatigued were left behind to take care of him. Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Green and Mr. Monkhouse, went on, and in a short time reached the summit. As botanists, their expectations were here abundantly gratified; for they found a great variety of plants, which, with respect to the alpine plants in Europe, are exactly what those plants are with respect to such as grow in the plain.

The cold was now become more severe, and the snow-blasts more frequent; the day also was so far spent, that it was found impossible to get back to the ship before the next morning: to pass the night upon such a mountain, in such a climate, was not only comfortless, but dreadful; it was impossible, however, to be avoided, and they were to provide for it as well as they could.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, while they were improving an opportunity which they had with so much danger and difficulty procured, by gathering the plants which they found upon the mountain, sent Mr. Green and Mr. Monkhouse back to Mr. Buchan and the people that were with him, with directions to bring them to a hill, which they thought lay in a better route for returning to the wood, and which was therefore appointed as a general rendez-

vous. It was proposed, that from this hill they should push through the swamp, which seemed by the new route not to be more than half a mile over, into the shelter of the wood, and there build their wigwam, and make a fire: this, as their way was all down hill, it seemed easy to accomplish. Their whole company assembled at the rendezvous, and though pinched with the cold, were in health and spirits, Mr. Buchan himself having recovered his strength in a much greater degree than could have been expected. It was now near eight o'clock in the evening, bnt still good day-light, and they set forward for the nearest valley, Mr. Banks himself undertaking to bring up the rear, and see that no straggler was left behind: this may perhaps be thought a superfluous caution, but it will soon appear to be otherwise. Dr. Solander, who had more than once crossed the mountains which divide Sweden from Norway. well knew that extreme cold, especially when joined with fatigue, produces a torpor and sleepiness that are almost irresistible: he therefore conjured the company to keep moving, whatever pain it might cost them, and whatever relief they might be promised by an inclination to rest: whoever sits down, says he, will sleep; and whoever sleeps, will wake no more. Thus, at once admonished and alarmed, they set forward; but while they were still upon the naked rock, and before they had got among the bushes, the cold became suddenly so intense, as to produce the effects that had been most dreaded. Dr. Solander himself was the first who found the inclination, against which he had warned others, irresistible, and insisted upon being suffered to lie down. Mr. Banks intreated and remonstrated in vain, down he lay upon the

ground, though it was covered with snow; and it was with great difficulty that his friends kept him from sleeping. Richmond also, one of the black servants, began to linger, having suffered from the cold in the same manner as the Doctor. Mr. Banks therefore sent five of the company, among whom was Mr. Buchan, forward, to get a fire ready at the first convenient place they could find; and himself, with four others, remained with the Doctor and Richmond, whom partly by persuasion and entreaty, and partly by force, they brought on; but when they had got through the greatest part of the birch and swamp, they both declared they could go no farther. Mr. Banks had recourse again to entreaty and expostulation, but they produced no effect: when Richmond was told, that if he did not go on he would in a short time be frozen to death; he answered, that he desired nothing but to lie down and die. The Doctor did not so explicitly renounce his life; he said he was willing to go on, but that he must first take some sleep; though he had before told the company that to sleep was to perish. Mr. Banks and the rest found it impossible to carry them, and there being no remedy, they were both suffered to sit down, being partly supported by the bushes, and in a few minutes they fell into a profound sleep: soon after some of the people who had been sent forward returned, with the welcome news that a fire was kindled about a quarter of a mile farther on the way. Mr. Banks then endeavoured to wake Dr. Solander, and happily succeeded; but, though he had not slept five minutes, he had almost lost the use of his limbs, and the muscles were so shrunk, that his shoes fell from his feet; he consented to go forward with such assistance as could

be given him, but no attempts to relieve poor Richmond were successful. It being found impossible to make him stir, after some time had been lost in the attempt, Mr. Banks left his other black servant, and a seaman, who seemed to have suffered least from the cold, to look after him; promising, that as soon as two others should be sufficiently warmed, they should be relieved. Mr. Banks, with much difficulty, at length got the Doctor to the fire; and soon after sent two of the people who had been refreshed, in hopes that with the assistance of those who had been left behind, they would be able to bring Richmond, even though it should still be found impossible to wake him. In about half an hour, however, they had the mortification to see these two men return alone: they said, that they had been all round the place to which they had been directed, but could find neither Richmond nor those who had been left with him; and that though they had shouted many times, no voice had replied. This was matter of equal surprise and concern, particularly to Mr. Banks, who, while he was wondering how it could happen, missed a bottle of rum, the company's whole stock, which they now concluded to be in the knapsack of one of the absenters. It was conjectured, that with this Richmond had been roused by the two persons who had been left with him, and that, having perhaps drank too freely of it themselves, they had all rambled from the place where they had been left, in search of the fire, instead of waiting for those who should have been their assistants and guides. Another fall of snow came on, and continued incessantly for two hours, so that all hopes of seeing them again, at least alive, were given up; but about twelve o'clock,

to the great joy of those at the fire, a shouting was heard at some distance. Mr. Banks, with four more, immediately went out, and found the seaman with just strength enough to stagger along, and call out for assistance: Mr. Banks sent him immediately to the fire, and, by his direction, proceeded in search of the other two, whom he soon after found. Richmond was upon his legs, but not able to put one before the other: his companion was lying upon the ground, as insensible as a stone. All hands were now called from the fire, and an attempt was made to carry them to it; but this, notwithstanding the united efforts of the whole company, was found to be impracticable. The night was extremely dark, the snow was now very deep, and, under these additional disadvantages, they found it very difficult to make way through the bushes and the bog for themselves, all of them getting many falls in the attempt. The only alternative was, to make a fire upon the spot; but the snow which had fallen, and was still falling, besides what was every moment shaken in flakes from the trees, rendered it equally impracticable to kindle one there, or to bring any part of that which had been kindled in the wood thither: they were therefore reduced to the sad necessity of leaving the unhappy wretches to their fate, having first made them a bed of boughs from the trees, and spread a covering of the same kind over them to a considerable height.

Having now been exposed to the cold and the snow near an hour and a half, some of the rest began to lose their sensibility; and one Briscoe, another of Mr. Banks's servants, was so ill, that it was thought he must die before he could be got to the fire. At the fire, however, at length they arrived;

and passed the night in a situation, which, however dreadful in itself, was rendered more afflicting by the remembrance of what was past, and the uncertainty of what was to come. Of twelve, the number that set out together in health and spirits, two were supposed to be already dead; a third was so ill, that it was very doubtful whether he would be able to go forward in the morning; and a fourth, Mr. Buchan, was in danger of a return of his fits, by fresh fatigue after so uncomfortable a night: they were distant from the ship a long day's journey, through pathless woods, in which it was too probable they might be bewildered till they were overtaken by the next night; and not having prepared for a journey of more than eight or ten hours, they were wholly destitute of provisions, except a vulture, which they happened to shoot while they were out, and which, if equally divided, would not afford each of them half a meal; and they knew not how much more they might suffer from the cold, as the snow still continued to fall. A dreadful testimony of the severity of the climate, as it was now the midst of summer in this part of the world, the 21st of December being here the longest day; and every thing might justly be dreaded from a phenomenon, which, in the corresponding season, is unknown even in Norway and Lapland.

When the morning dawned, they saw nothing round them, as far as the eye could reach, but snow, which seemed to lie as thick upon the trees as on the ground; and the blasts returned so frequently, and with such violence, that they found it impossible for them to set out: how long this might last they knew not, and they had but too much reason to apprehend that it would confine them in that

desolate forest, till they perished with hunger and cold.

After having suffered the misery and terror of this situation till six o'clock in the morning, they conceived some hopes of deliverance by discovering the face of the sun through the clouds, which were become thinner, and began to break away. Their first care was to see whether the poor wretches whom they had been obliged to leave among the bushes were yet alive; three of the company were dispatched for that purpose, and very soon afterwards returned with the melancholy news, that they were dead.

Notwithstanding the flattering appearance of the sky, the snow continued to fall so thick that they could not venture out upon their journey to the ship; but about eight o'clock a small regular breeze sprung up, which, with the prevailing influence of the sun, at length cleared the air; and they soon after, with great joy, saw the snow fall in large flakes from the trees, a certain sign of an approaching thaw: they now examined more critically the state of their invalids; Briscoe was still very ill, but said that he thought himself able to walk; and Mr. Buchan was much better than either he or his friends had any reason to expect. They were now, however, pressed by the calls of hunger, to which, after long fasting, every consideration of future good or evil immediately gives way. Before they set forward therefore, it was unanimously agreed, that they should eat their vulture; the bird was accordingly skinned, and it being thought best to divide it before it was fit to be eaten, it was cut into ten portions, and every man cooked his own as he thought fit. After this repast, which fur-

nished each of them with about three mouthfuls, they prepared to set out; but it was ten o'clock before the snow was sufficiently gone off to render their march practicable. After a walk of about three hours, they were very agreeably surprised to find themselves upon the beach, and much nearer to the ship than they had any reason to expect. Upon reviewing their track from the vessel, they perceived, that instead of ascending the hill in a line, so as to penetrate into the country, they had made almost a circle round it. When they came on board, they congratulated each other upon their safety, with a joy that no man can feel who has not been exposed to equal danger; and as I had suffered great anxiety at their not returning in the evening of the day on which they set out, I was not wholly without my share.

On the 20th Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went again on shore, to visit an Indian town; when they got within a small distance, two of the people came out to meet them, with such state as they could assume; and when they joined them, they began to halloo, without addressing themselves either to the strangers or their companions; and having continued this strange vociferation for some time, they conducted them to the town. It was situated on a dry knoll, or small hill, covered with wood, none of which seemed to have been cleared away, and consisted of about twelve or fourteen hovels, of the most rude and inartificial structure that can be imagined. They were nothing more than a few poles, set up so as to incline towards each other, and meet at the top, forming a kind of cone, like some of our bee-hives: on the weather-side they were covered with a few boughs, and a little grass;

Inhabitants of Terra del Fuego.

Dublin Published by J. Christian, Esq. Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

and on the lee-side about one-eighth of the circle was left open, both for a door and fire-place. Furniture they had none; a little grass, which lay round the inside of the hovel, served both for chairs and beds; and of all the utensils which necessity and ingenuity have concurred to produce among other savage nations, they saw only a basket to carry in the hand, a satchel to hang at the back, and the bladder of some beast to hold water, which the natives drink through a hole that is made near the top for that purpose.

The inhabitants of this town were a small tribe, not more than fifty in number, of both sexes, and of every age. Their colour resembles the rust of iron mixed with oil, and they have long black hair: the men are large, but clumsily built; their stature is from five feet eight to five feet ten; the women are much less, few of them being more than five feet high. Their whole apparel consists of the skin of a guanicoe, or seal, which is thrown over their shoulders, exactly in the state which it came from the animal's back; a piece of the same skin, which is drawn over their feet, and gathered about the ancles like a purse; and a small flap, which is worn by the women as a succedaneum for a fig-leaf. The men wear their cloak open, the women tie it about their waist with a thong. But although they are content to be naked, they are very ambitious to be fine. Their faces were painted in various forms: the region of the eye was in general white, and the rest of the face adorned with horizontal streaks of red and black; yet scarcely any two were exactly alike. This decoration seems to be more profuse and elaborate upon particular occasions; for the two gentlemen who introduced Mr. Banks and the

Doctor into the town, were almost covered with streaks of black, so as to make a very striking appearance. Both men and women wore bracelets, of such beads as they could make themselves of small shells or bones; the women both upon their wrists and ancles, the men upon their wrists only: but to compensate for the want of bracelets on their legs, they wore a kind of fillet of brown worsted round their heads. They seemed to set a particular value upon any thing that was red, and preferred beads even to a knife or a hatchet.

Their language in general is guttural; their food, shell-fish, for we saw no appearance of their having any other. The only things that we found among them, in which there was the least appearance of neatness or ingenuity, were their weapons, which consisted of a bow and arrows. They did not appear to have any government or subordination; yet they seemed to live in the utmost harmony: neither did we discover any appearance of religion among them. Upon the whole, these people appeared to be the most destitute and forlorn, as well as the most stupid of all human beings; the outcasts of nature, who spent their lives in wandering about the dreary wastes, where two of our people perished with cold in the midst of summer; with no dwelling but a wretched hovel of sticks and grass, which would not only admit the wind, but the snow and the rain; almost naked, and destitute of every convenience that is furnished by the rudest art, having no implement even to dress their food.

We here saw no quadruped except seals, sea-lions and dogs; of land birds there are but few; of fish we saw scarce any; and among the insects, which are not numerous, there is no species either

hurtful or troublesome; but of plants, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander found a vast variety.

On the 22d of January, having got our wood and water on board, we continued our course through the strait. On the 24th of March, some of the people reported, that they saw a log of wood pass by the ship. On the 25th, about noon, one of the marines, a young fellow about twenty, was placed as sentry at the cabin door; while he was upon this duty, one of my servants was at the same time preparing to cut a piece of seal-skin into tobacco-pouches: he had promised one to several of the men, but had refused one to this young fellow, though he had asked him several times; upon which he jocularly threatened to steal one, if it should be in his power. It happened that the servant being called hastily away, gave the skin in charge to the sentinel, without regarding what had passed between them. The sentinel immediately secured a piece of the skin, which the other missing at his return, grew angry; but after some altercation, contented himself with taking it away, declaring, that for so trifling an affair he would not complain of him to the officers. But it happened that one of his fellow-soldiers, overhearing the dispute, came to the knowledge of what had happened, and told it to the rest, who, taking it into their heads to stand up for the honour of their corps, reproached the offender with great bitterness, and reviled him in the most opprobrious terms; they exaggerated his offence into a crime of the deepest dye; they said it was a theft by a sentry when he was upon duty, and of a thing that had been committed to his trust; they declared it a disgrace to associate with him; and the sergeant in particular said, that if the person from

whom the skin had been stolen would not complain, he would complain himself; for that his honour would suffer if the affair was not punished. From the scoffs and reproaches of these men of honour, the poor young fellow retired to his hammock in an agony of confusion and shame. The sergeant soon after went to him, and ordered him to follow him to the deck; he obeyed without reply, but it being in the dusk of the evening, he slipped from the sergeant and went forward: he was seen by some of the people, who thought he was gone to the head; but a search being made for him afterwards, it was found that he had thrown himself overboard; and I was then first made acquainted with the theft and its consequences. The loss of this man was the more regretted, as he was remarkably quiet and industrious, and the very action that put an end to his life was a proof of an ingenuous mind, for to such only disgrace is insupportable.

On the 4th of April land was discovered at the distance of about three or four leagues, which proved to be an island of an oval form, with a lagoon in the middle. The border of land, which circumscribes the lagoon, is in many places very low and narrow, though covered with trees of different verdure. We saw several of the natives on shore, who appeared to be tall; and their habitations were visible, under some clumps of palm-nut trees. To this spot, which lies in 18° 47′ S. latitude, and 139° 28′ W. longitude, we gave the name of Lagoon-island. In the evening we got up with a low woody island, of a circular form, about a mile in compass, on which we could see no inhabitants, neither could we distinguish any cocoa-nut trees; the land, however, was covered with verdure. This island, which

is seven leagues distant from Lagoon-island, we called Thrumb-cap. We went on with a fine trade-wind and pleasant weather, and on the 5th discovered a low island, about ten or twelve leagues in compass, shaped exactly like a bow, the arch and cord of which were land, and the space between them water. This island, to which we gave the name of Bow-island, we knew to be inhabited, from the smoke that was visible in different parts of it. The next day land again appeared to the westward, which we found to be two islands, or rather groups of islands, ranging in all directions, some of them ten miles or upwards in length, but none more than a quarter of a mile broad. These, which we named The Groups, were inhabited by a people about our size, well made, of a brown complexion, and appeared to be naked: their hair, which was black, was confined by a fillet that went round the head, and stuck out behind like a bush. On the 7th, at day-break, we discovered another island to the northward, which looked green and pleasant, but we saw neither cocoa-trees nor inhabitants; it abounded with birds, and we gave it the name of Bird-island. On the 8th, to the northward, we saw what appeared to be a double range of low, woody islands, joined together by reefs, so as to form one island, in the form of an ellipsis, with a lake in the middle of it; to which we gave the name of Chain island. After a tempestuous night, on the 10th, we saw the land, to which captain Wallis gave the name of Osnaburgh island, called by the natives Maitea; and about one o'clock, some of the people who were on the look out, said they saw land a head, in that part of the horizon where it was expected to appear. The next morning it appeared very

distinctly, being high and mountainous; and we knew it to be the same that captain Wallis had called King George the Third's island. We came to an anchor on the 13th, in Port-royal bay, called by the natives Matavai; and were immediately surrounded by the natives in their canoes, who gave us cocoa-nuts, fruit resembling apples, bread-fruit, and some small fishes, in exchange for beads and other trifles.

Otaheite was discovered by captain Wallis, in the Dolphin, on the 19th of June, 1767. It lies between the latitude of 17° 28′ and 17° 53′ south, and between 149° 11′ and 149° 39′ west longitude; consisting of two peninsulas of somewhat a circular form, which are joined by an isthmus, and surrounded by a reef of coral rocks, which form several excellent harbours, where there is room and depth of water for any number of the largest ships.

The face of the country is very extraordinary; for a border of low land almost entirely surrounds each peninsula, and behind this border the land rises in ridges that run up into the middle of these divisions, and there form mountains that may be seen at a vast distance. The soil, except upon the very tops of the ridges, is remarkably rich and fertile, watered by a great number of rivulets, and covered with fruit-trees of various kinds, forming the most delightful groves. The border of low land that lies between the ridges and the sea is in few places more than a mile and a half broad; and this, together with some of the valleys, are the only parts that are inhabited.

The island produces cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, sugar-canes, plantains, a most delicious fruit named here the jambu, bananas of thirteen sorts, apples, sweet potatoes, yams, and many others, which serve

the natives for food. But they have no European fruits, garden-stuff, pulse, or grain of any kind.

Among the natives who first visited the ship, there was an elderly man, of the rank of an earee or chief, whom Mr. Gore, now second lieutenant, immediately recognised as the friendly Indian, who had been so essentially serviceable in establishing a good police on the former visit, and whose son was to have embarked with captain Wallis. His name was now found to be Owhaw; he received every mark of attention and respect from the gentlemen of the ship: but whether it arose from some disgust which he conceived, in consequence of an unhappy skirmish between a sentinel and some of the natives, in which, however, this chief bore no part; or that the presence of some of the superior chiefs, who soon became constant guests, made him feel himself degraded below his former consequence; so it was, that on the third day he withdrew himself from all his foreign connexions, gave up all his expectations from their munificence, retired to reside in his own district, and, during the whole time that the Endeavour continued here, appears never once to have quitted his retreat: a sacrifice as great, to an Indian, as for a nobleman in Europe to withdraw from court, and the pleasures of the capital, and seclude himself at his country seat.

It was not until fifteen days after their arrival, that the lady who bore so conspicuous a share in the transactions on this island, when captain Wallis touched here, became known; and so far was she from seeking distinction at present, that the master, whose name was Molyneaux, and who was one of those who had made the second voyage in the Dol-

phin, singled her out from among a group of females, and brought her into notice. The inhabitants of this secluded spot appear no less to be exposed to the fluctuations of fortune, than the members of civilized communities: the house, in which this Calypso had entertained her Ulysses about two years before, was now taken down, and not a vestige of it remained; her lands also had been invaded, and her property transferred and wasted; though she still maintained the dignity of rank, and appeared only with an abated consequence. Mr. Cook describes her as about forty years of age, not tall, but of a large make; her skin white, and her eyes possessing uncommon intelligence and sensibility; with the appearance of having been handsome when she was young, but at that time little more than the memorials of her beauty remained. After some time it was discovered, that this lady had a husband, a chief of the first rank, named Oamo, from whom she had been long separated by mutual consent, after having borne him a son and a daughter; the one about seven years old, named Terridiri, the other about sixteen. Oberea had a favourite named Obadee, whom she admitted to her bed in the most open and avowed manner; and a young man of remarkable intelligence, named Tupia, managed her affairs.

As the continuance on this island was likely to be for a considerable time, it became necessary to settle the prices which the men were to pay for such articles as they might wish to obtain from the natives; for if each person on board the ship was left to his own discretion in making exchanges, the natives would have increased their demands, and continual causes of quarrels would have occurred;

a few short rules were therefore drawn up, by which the conduct of the officers, as well as of the seamen, was to be regulated; these were made public, and the strictest attention paid to the observance of them; which produced the most beneficial consequences, for every kind of provision, not excepting hogs, was procured, for a considerable time, by beads; a single bead, as big as a pea, would purchase five or six cocoa-nuts, and as many of the bread-fruit. Nails and hatchets were exchanged with great parsimony, and their value became much enhanced by their scarcity.

The harbour in which the Endeavour lay, lies on the western side of a point of land, which stretching out into a promontory, forms the extremity of the island. On this neck of land leave was procured from some of the chiefs to erect a fort, and set up some tents; and as this spot was fixed upon for making the observations on the transit, the observatory was set up, and the name of Point Venus given to it. Here a guard was constantly kept, day and night, which was relieved with as much exactness as in the best regulated fortified town. In throwing up intrenchments, and cutting pickets and fascines, many of the natives voluntarily assisted, bringing the timbers from the wood where they had been cut, with great alacrity.

The propensity of these people to steal, appeared as soon as any intercourse took place. The first time the gentlemen went ashore from the ship, Dr. Solander lost an opera glass in a shagreen case, and Mr. Monkhouse, the surgeon, a snuff box; but these were soon recovered. Another theft, however, was attended with worse consequences. On the 15th of April, whilst Mr. Cook was making an

excursion up the country, to endeavour to procure some hogs, having left thirteen marines and a petty officer to guard the tent which was erected on the point, one of the Indians watched an opportunity, and, snatching away a musket from a sentinel on duty, fled with it precipitately. The midshipman, who commanded the party, with great inhumanity ordered them to fire; and thirteen pieces were discharged among the flying crowd, but happily without effect. The petty officer, observing that the thief did not fall, pursued him himself, and shot him dead.—Seamen have always been found forward to punish the slightest transgression in these children of nature, with instant death: hardiness, and a contempt of danger, produce cruelty and a thirst for blood; the man, who is ready on all occasions to expose his own life, knows not how to appreciate the value of life to another; the human breast must be meliorated and softened, before pity is capable of lodging there: yet to this wanton murderer of an harmless savage, did every soul on board the Endeavour afterward stand indebted for the preservation of their lives. The Indian thus slain was, however, the only victim upon this visit to the island; and he was sacrificed in the absence, and to the great concern of the commander. When M. de Bougainville touched here, a transient misunderstanding with the natives cost four of them their lives. Captain Cook was the first circumnavigator of the globe, who did not mark his track with blood.

The unhappy fate of this guiltless thief furnished an opportunity for observing the manner in which these people treat their dead.——They placed the corpse in the open air, till the bones became quite

dry: a shed was erected close by the house where the deceased had resided; it was about fifteen feet long, and eleven broad; one end was left quite open; the other end, and the two sides, were partly inclosed with a sort of wicker-work. The bier was a frame of wood, like that on which the sea-beds, called cots, are placed, with a matted bottom, and supported by four posts, at the height of about four feet from the ground. The body was covered first with a mat, and then with white cloth; by the side of it lay a wooden mace, one of their weapons of war; and near the head of it, which lay next to the close end of the shed, lay two cocoa-nut shells; at the other end, a bunch of green leaves, with some dried twigs, all tied together, were stuck in the ground, by which lay a stone, about as big as a cocoa-nut. Near these lay one of the young plantain leaves, that are used for emblems of peace, and close by it a stone axe. At the open end of the shed also hung, in several strings, a great number of palm-nuts; and without the shed was stuck up in the ground a stem of a plantain-tree, about six feet high, upon the top of which was placed a cocoa-nut shell, full of fresh water; against the side of one of the posts hung a small bag, containing a few pieces of bread-fruit ready roasted, which had not been all put in at one time, some being fresh, and some being stale. This minute examination of their manner of treating their dead, seemed to be very unwelcome to the natives. The food so placed by the corpse, is designed as an offering to their gods. They cast in, near the body, small pieces of cloth, on which the tears and blood of the mourners had been shed; for in their paroxysms of grief it is an universal custom to wound themselves with a

shark's tooth. The mourner is always a man; he is dressed in a very singular habit. When the bones are stripped of their flesh, and become dry, they are buried. Their regard to their dead is very remarkable. One of the ship's company happening to pull a flower from a tree, which grew on one of their sepulchral inclosures, an Indian came suddenly behind him, and struck him; and a party of sailors, who were sent to get some stones for ballast for the ship, had like to have been embroiled with the natives, by pulling down some part of an inclosure of this kind. The shade under which the dead are laid, is called tupapow; the inclosure in which their bones are deposited, is called morai: these latter are also places of worship.

It was impossible to teach the Indians to pronounce the names of their guests; they called captain Cook, Toote; Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant, Hete; Molyneux they renounced in absolute despair, and called the master Roba, from his christian name Robert; Mr.Gore, the second lieutenant, was Toarro; Dr. Solander, Torano; Mr. Banks, Tapane; Mr. Green, Eteree; Mr. Parkinson, Patini; Mr. Sporing, Polini; Mr. Pickersgill, Pedrodero; and in this manner they formed names for almost every man in the ship. In some, however, it was not easy to find any traces of the original; and they were perhaps not mere arbitrary sounds formed upon the occasion, but signified words in their own language. Mr. Monkhouse, a midshipman, they called Matte, which signifies in their language dead, because he commanded the party that killed the man for stealing a musket. The nearest imitation which they could reach of king George, was by calling him Kihiargo.

The residence of the gentlemen on shore would have been by no means disagreeable, if they had not been incessantly tormented by the flies, which, among other mischief, made it almost impossible for Mr. Parkinson, Mr. Banks's natural history painter, to work; for they not only covered his subject, so as that no part of its surface could be seen, but even ate the colour off the paper as fast as he could lay it on: but moschetto-nets and fly-flaps in some measure removed the inconvenience.

Tootahah, the king or rather regent of the island, entertained the gentlemen with the music of the country. Four persons performed upon flutes, which had only two stops, and therefore could not sound more than four notes, by half tones; they were sounded like our German flutes, except that the performer, instead of applying it to his mouth, blew into it with one nostril, while he stopped the other with his thumb: to these instruments four other persons sung, and kept very good time; but only one tune was played during the whole concert.

Toubourai Tamaide, a chief, who shewed the most friendly attachment to Mr. Banks, and the other gentlemen, was visiting them on board the ship, when a knife was missed. The general character which the natives had for being thieves, concurring with the circumstance of the chief being seated next the person who had lost the knife, fixed a strong suspicion on him as being the thief; and Mr. Banks, though reluctantly, accused him of having taken it. He positively denied any knowledge of it; and when the affair was cleared up, and the knife produced, which had not been stolen, but taken away by one of the servants, the chief expressed the strongest emotions of mind, both in

his looks and gestures; the tears started from his eyes, and he made signs with the knife, that if he had been guilty of such an action as had been imputed to him, he would submit to have his throat cut. The dispositions of these people, however, seem to be happily free from the smallest tincture of rancorous resentment, or a sullen spirit of revenge; for when the innocence of Toubourai Tamaide was thus certified, Mr. Banks could not but feel himself much concerned at the groundless charge that had been made, for which he endeavoured to atone by presents, and paying him particular marks of attention; these presently obliterated all remembrance of the transaction from the breast of the placid chief. But alas! when poor Tamaide had established, among the gentlemen of the ship, a character for immaculate honesty, one private act of theft sullied his fair fame. A parcel of nails, which lay in a corner of the cabin, and which were larger than any that had been produced in barter, was a temptation too strong to be resisted; the poor chief was overcome by it, and at different times secreted five of these inestimable rarities. He happened to be detected, one was found upon him, and he, who was thought to have been the only exception to the general character of pilferers, which had been given to these Indians, was found to possess a portion of the same spirit. His shame and sorrow, on the detection, was very apparent; but though he promised to return all his stolen goods, yet when he went home, he chose rather to remove into the country than fulfil his engagements; and no after persuasion could induce him to part with what he had thus unwarrantably acquired. Great allowances, however, ought certainly to be

made, for the pilfering propensity so prevalent among these people; for an Indian among penny knives and beads, or even nails and broken glass, is in the same state of trial with the meanest servant in Europe, among unlocked coffers of jewels and gold.

The ship's butcher was charged, by the same Toubourai Tamaide, with having, by threats and menaces of death, obtained a stone hatchet, in exchange for a nail, from a woman: being found guilty of the offence, he was ordered by the captain to be stripped, and tied up to the rigging, there to receive a certain number of lashes. The natives viewed this transaction very attentively, and on the first stroke being given they interposed, and with great emotion entreated for the delinquent's pardon; but an example being necessary, both to deter the natives and ship's company from acts of violence, and to show the impartial manner in which justice was administered on offenders, they interceded in vain; on which they expressed their sorrow and pity by tears and lamentations.

At another time Mr. Banks received a hasty message, informing him that poor Tamaide was dying of poison, which some of the ship's company had given him. He set out immediately, and found his Indian friend leaning his head against a post, in an attitude of the utmost languor and despondency; he had just before brought up a folded leaf, which he had swallowed, and which those about him said contained some of the poison, which was producing his death. On opening this deadly potion, Mr. Banks was not a little pleased to find, that it was nothing more than a chew of tobacco, which, having been given to him, he had swallowed. Whilst the leaf

436747

and its contents were examining, the poor despairing Indian looked up to Mr. Banks with the most piteous aspect. By the help of cocoa-nut milk, of which he drank plentifully, he was soon relieved from his sickness, and the apprehensions of immediate death. At another time this chief being visited by Mr. Banks, suddenly seized the gun which his guest had in his hand, cocked it, and holding it up in the air, drew the trigger, but it happened only to flash in the pan. As it was highly proper to keep these people in ignorance of the use of firearms, this liberty was severely reproved by Mr. Banks. The crest-fallen chief bore the reprimand very patiently; but his visitor had no sooner left him, than he set off, with all his family and furniture, to a remote part of the island. His friendship and influence were of too much consequence, in supplying the ship with provisions, to suffer this misunderstanding to continue. Mr. Banks, therefore, determined to follow him, and adjust the difference. He found him sitting in the middle of a large circle of people, himself apparently absorbed in grief and despair, and the countenance of all around him betokening the same sensations. On Mr. Banks's entering the circle, a woman expressed her trouble, by striking a shark's tooth into her head several times, till it was covered with blood; but the endeavours of Mr. Banks to dissipate this general gloom, were not ineffectual, and the same friendly intercourse was established as before; the chief and his retinue returned to their former habitation, and the whole was entirely forgotten.

When divine service was performed on shore, on a Sunday, the same chief, and his wife Tomia, were persuaded to attend. During the whole ser-

vice, they very attentively observed the behaviour of Mr. Banks, and very exactly imitated it, standing, sitting or kneeling, as they saw him do. They seemed to be apprehensive that they were employed about something serious and important, by their calling to the Indians that were without to be silent; yet, when the service was over, neither of them asked any questions, nor would they attend to any attempt that was made to explain what had been done.

On the 12th of May, two ladies, who had not been seen before, honoured the gentlemen with a visit, accompanied by a man, who appeared to be a servant; they came in a double canoe. The first ceremony, on meeting, consisted in delivering to Mr. Banks, who happened to be the person addressed, some young plantain-trees; after which, a large bundle of cloth was brought, and spread upon the ground, piece by piece, in the space between Mr. Banks and the ladies: there were in all nine pieces; but as soon as three pieces were spread one upon another, the foremost of the women, who seemed to be the principal, and was called Oorattooa, stepped upon them, and, taking up her garments all around her to the waist, turned about, with great composure and deliberation, and with an air of perfect innocence and simplicity, three times: when this was done, she dropped the veil, and stepping off the cloth, three more pieces were laid on, and she repeated the ceremony; then stepping off as before, the last three were laid on, and the same exhibition was made a third time. This was no sooner finished, than the cloth was rolled up, and given to Mr. Banks, as a present from the lady, who, with her friend, came up and saluted

him. He made such presents to them both as he thought would be most acceptable; and after having staid about an hour they went away. This instance of lifting up the garments, in token of respect, is an unique in the manners of these people; the constant manner of paying obeisance being by uncovering the body as low as the waist.

On the 27th of May, a party, consisting of six persons, paid a visit to Tootahah, and the distance being too great to return the same night to the ship, it was necessary to look out for lodgings. Oberea, who had arrived in a canoe, offered to accommodate Mr. Banks on board it; the night being hot, Mr. Banks took off his clothes, and Oberea kindly insisted upon taking them into her own custody, alleging that otherwise they would most certainly be stolen. Mr. Banks, having such a safeguard, resigned himself to sleep in perfect tranquillity, having gone early to rest, according to the custom of the country; but awaking about eleven o'clock, he searched in vain for his clothes, where he had seen them deposited by the mistress of his wardrobe, whom he then awakened: she started up, and on hearing his complaint, ordered lights, and prepared in great haste to recover what was lost. Tootahah himself slept in the next canoe, and being soon alarmed, he joined Oberea to go in search of the thief. Mr. Banks was not in a condition to attend them, for of his apparel scarce any thing was left him but his breeches; his coat and waistcoat, with his pistols, powder-horn, and many other things that were in the pockets, were gone. His noble friends soon returned, but without having obtained any intelligence either of the clothes or the thief; and, notwithstanding the counterfeit solicitude of the

lady and the regent, it was strongly suspected, that they were both accessaries, if not principals in the robbery. Indeed, when the company assembled in the morning, every one, Dr. Solander excepted, had lost some part or other of his apparel; and even captain Cook had his stockings stolen from under his head, though he had not been asleep. To Mr. Banks, however, Oberea brought some of her country cloths, as a succedaneum for his own, so that he made a most motley appearance, half Indian and half English.

When the observatory was set up, the astronomical quadrant, with some other instruments, were taken on shore, and deposited in the tent, from whence, however, before the next morning, the quadrant was conveyed away, with the packing-case in which it lay, and which was eighteen inches square, although a sentinel had been posted the whole night at the tent door. This was a most alarming loss, as it threatened entirely to frustrate the chief intention of the voyage; but by a stern and peremptory requisition of the stolen goods from the chiefs, every thing was recovered before evening.

As the day of observation now approached, it was determined, in consequence of some hints which had been given by lord Morton, who was president of the Royal Society when the Endeavour left England, to send out two parties to observe the transit from other situations. A party was therefore sent westward, to the little island of Eimao, called by captain Wallis, Duke of York's island, under the direction of Mr. Gore, whilst another, with Mr. Hincks, the first lieutenant, went eastward in the pinnace, for the same purpose. The observation was successfully made by the astronomers at Point Venus,

as well as by the parties deputed; a particular account of which may be seen in the Philosophical Transactions, vol. lxi. part ii. page 397 et seq. By a comparison of the observations made on this transit, from the various parts of the globe, on which it was viewed by men of science, sent out for that purpose by many learned bodies in Europe, the system of the universe has, in some particulars, become better understood; the distance of the sun from the earth is now found to be about thirteen millions of miles greater than it had ever been calculated before. In the year 1761, a transit of Venus over the sun's disk was observed in several parts of Europe with great accuracy; in consequence of that contact, the distance of the sun from the earth was found to be greater than was imagined, by fourteen millions of miles. The distance between the great luminary and this planet, as now settled, is one hundred and eight millions of miles; and the observations made in the South Sea, when compared with those made in Europe on the same occasion, as they take in the widest possible range, tend greatly to assist the human mind, when traversing the immensity of space, and fixing the position of the orbs.

Whilst the planet was in contact with the sun, Mr. Banks took Tarrao, the king of the island of Eimao, and his sister, who was named Nuna, with some of their principal attendants, among whom were three very handsome young women, to the observatory, and showed them the phenomenon; endeavouring at the same time to make them understand, that he and his companions had come from their own country on purpose to see it. The people of this island distinguish all the stars sepa-

nately by names, and know in what part of the heavens they will appear, in any of the months during which they are visible in their horizon; they also know the time of their annual appearing and disappearing, with more precision than will easily be believed by an European astronomer. They have likewise a wonderful sagacity in foretelling the weather, at least the quarter from whence the wind will blow: this they did with much greater certainty than our nautical people.

The grand object of the voyage being thus happily accomplished, the weather and appearance of the sky having proved as favourable as could be desired, five weeks longer were spent on the island; in which time Mr. Cook made the circuit of the island in the pinnace, accompanied by Mr. Banks, for the purpose of sketching out the coast and harbours. On the 1st of July the Endeavour sailed to the westward, and in the evening reached the harbour where M. de Bougainville lay, which is called by the natives Ohidea; and here met with a chief, named Orette, whose brother had embarked with that officer. Here too was Oorattooa, the lady who paid her compliments to Mr. Banks in so singular a manner, and a chief named Tituboalo, who signified, that it was unsafe to go to the southward of the island, as the country there was inhabited by a people, who were not subject to Tootahah, and who would kill the whole party. This information had no other effect, than to induce the party to load their pieces with ball: which was so well understood by Tituboalo, to be a precaution which rendered them formidable, that he now agreed to accompany them. The next morning the gentlemen landed on a district, which they learned was

the dominion of a chief called Maraitata, which signifies "the burying-place of men," whose father's name was Pahairedo, or "the stealer of boats." Though these names seemed to favour the account which had been given by Titaboalo, it was found to be ill supported by fact; for both the father and the son received the party with great civility, brought forth provisions, and at length sold a large hog for a hatchet. Not a single bead or ornament was seen among the natives here, which had come from the Endeavour, though several European articles of traffic were seen; in one of the houses lay two twelve-pound shot, one of which was marked with the broad arrow of England, though the people said they had them from the ships that lay in Bougainville's harbour. Many sepulchral buildings were seen, some of which were decorated with carved boards, set upright, on the tops of which were various figures of birds and men: on one in particular, there was the representation of a cock, which was painted red and yellow, to imitate the feathers of that animal; and rude images of men were, in some of them, placed one upon the head of another. The island is divided into two peninsulas, connected together by a narrow neck of land; each of these is a distinct government, wholly independent of the other. The name of the larger peninsula is Opoureonou, or Otaheite Nue; the smaller one, Tiarrabou, or Otaheite Ete. The latter was governed by a chief named Waheatua, a thin old man, with a very white head and beard. Here were seen a goose and a turkey-cock, which the natives said had been left on the island by the Dolphin; they were both enormously fat, and so tame, that they followed the Indians, who were fond of

them to excess, wherever they went. At one end of a long house were seen fifteen human jaw-bones, which were fastened to a semi-circular board; they appeared to be fresh, and there was not one of them that wanted a single tooth. The whole of the south-east division of the island appeared to be fertile and populous, insomuch as to surpass Opourenou in those particulars, although it is not above one-fourth part as large.

On the north-western extremity of Tiarrabou, or the smaller division of the island, was seen the figure of a man constructed of basket-work, rudely made, but not ill designed; it was something more than seven feet high, and rather too bulky in proportion to its height. This wicker skeleton was completely covered with feathers, which were white where the skin was to appear, and black in the parts which it is their custom to paint or stain, as well as upon the head, which was designed to represent hair. Upon the head also were four protuberances, three in front, and one behind, which had the appearance of horns, but the Indians called them tate ete, little men. This image was called Manioe, and was a representation of Mauwe, one of their Eatuas, or gods of the second class. It was said to be the only one of the kind at Otaheite. On arriving at the southern coast of Opoureonou, or the north-west peninsula, they soon reached a district called Paparra, belonging to Oamo and Oberea; the ground here was strewed with human bones, chiefly ribs and vertebræ. These were the memorials of a descent which the people of the south-east peninsula had made about six months before, when they had killed a great number of the natives. Oberea and Oamo saved their lives by a precipi-

tate retreat to the mountains, whilst the conquerors burned all the houses, and carried away the hogs, with whatever other booty they could possess themselves of; and the jaw-bones, which were seen in the territory of the conquerors, were trophies of victory collected from the slain.

Paparra is the southern point of the island, as Point Venus is the northern, and to which it is exactly parallel. The western side of the island was coasted without any material occurrence; and the party arrived at Matavai bay on the 1st of July, having found the circuit of the island, including both peninsulas, to be about thirty leagues. A reef of coral rocks encompasses this coast, except in some few parts. Here are several excellent bays and harbours, where there are room and depth of water for any number of the largest ships. The stones every where bear the appearance of fire.

The best articles of traffic on this island are axes, hatchets, spikes, large nails, looking-glasses, knives and beads; for some of which, every thing which the natives had might be procured. They are indeed fond of white linen cloth, both white and printed; but an axe, worth half a crown, would fetch more than a piece of cloth worth twenty shillings. When the Dolphin lay here, the gunner put one of the natives in possession of an iron pot, in which he used to dress his victuals while on shore, and the natives grew fond of boiled meat, of which manner of dressing they had till then been totally ignorant. Several iron pots were afterwards given to Oberea and some of the chiefs, which were in constant use, and drew every body to see them; but during the long stay of Mr. Cook in this island, we hear nothing of their improvement in the culinary

art, or of any farther assistance which was rendered this people, by supplying them with pots for boiling. However desirous the natives might be to eat boiled meat, it was not adviseable to produce such an article of barter as iron kettles, when a few spike nails, or a common hatchet, would procure one of their largest hogs.

There are no other tame animals on the island but hogs, dogs, and poultry; and the only wild animals are tropic birds, parroquets, pigeons, ducks, a few other birds, rats, and a very few serpents. The sea, however, supplies the inhabitants with a great variety of the most excellent fish.

Dogs are considered by these Indians as more delicate food than their pork; such as are bred to be eaten taste no animal food, but are kept wholly upon bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, yams, and other vegetables of the like kind: the gentlemen of the ship being desirous of tasting this dainty, had one, which was very fat, killed and dressed after the manner of the country, and they all agreed that it made a very good dish. The animal is suffocated, by his mouth and nose being close stopped with the hand, which operation is continued above a quarter of an hour. In the mean time a hole is made in the ground about a foot deep, in which a fire is kindled, and some small stones placed in layers alternately with the wood, to heat. The dog, when dead, is singed by holding him over the fire, and by scraping him with a shell, the hair is taken off as clean as if he had been scalded in hot water. He is then cut up with the same instrument, and his entrails being taken out, are carried to the sea, and there washed; they are afterwards put into cocoa-nut shells, with what blood comes from the body, and when the

hole is sufficiently heated, the fire is taken out, and some of the hot stones being placed at the bottom, are covered with green leaves, upon which the dog with the entrails is placed, and other leaves being laid upon them, the whole is covered with the rest of the hot stones, and the mouth of the hole close stopped with earth: in somewhat less than four hours it is again opened, and the dog taken out, which is always found to be excellently well baked. To this accout of their cookery, it is necessary to add something concerning the bread-fruit: it grows upon a tree commonly about the size of a middling oak, which has leaves frequently a foot and a half long, of an oblong shape, deeply sinuated like those of the fig-tree, which they resemble in consistence and colour, and in the exuding of a white milky juice upon being broken. The fruit is about the size and shape of a child's head, and the surface is reticulated not much unlike a truffle: it is covered with a thin skin, and has a core about as big as the handle of a small knife: the eatable part lies between the skin and the core; it is as white as snow, and somewhat of the consistence of new bread: it must be roasted before it is eaten, being first divided into three or four parts: its taste is insipid, with a slight sweetness, resembling that of the crumb of wheaten bread mixed with a Jerusalem artichoke. Mr. Green, the astronomer, saw here a species of the fig, the branches of which bending down, take fresh root in the earth, and thus form a congeries of trunks, which being very close to each other, and all joined by a common vegetation, appear like one vast trunk; that which was seen here was sixty yards in circumference.

The men are tall, strong, well-limbed, and finely

shaped; the women are of an inferior size. They are of a clear olive complexion, their skins smooth and soft, and the shape of the face comely, though the nose is somewhat flat. Their eyes, especially those of the women, are full of expression; their teeth are white and even, and their breath untainted. Their hair is coarse, and almost universally black; and the men have beards, which they wear in many fashions, but always pluck out a great part of them, and keep the rest perfectly clean and neat. Both sexes also eradicate every hair from under their arms. In their motions there is at once vigour and ease; their walk is graceful, their deportment liberal, and their behaviour to strangers and to each other affable and courteous. They also seem to be brave, and of an open, candid disposition, without either suspicion or treachery, cruelty or revenge. Their only vices, if in them such propensities can be called by that name, are a propensity to thieving and lewdness.

It ought not to be omitted, that both the men and women are remarkable for their cleanliness. They constantly wash their bodies in running water three times every day; once as soon as they rise in the morning, once at noon, and again before they sleep at night, whether the sea or river be near them or at a distance. They wash their hands and mouths at every meal; and both their clothes and persons are kept without spot or stain.

In the water they are amazingly expert. On a part of the shore where a tremendously high surf broke, insomuch that no European boat could live in it, and the best swimmer in Europe could not have preserved himself from drowning, if by any accident he had been exposed to its fury, as the

shore was covered with pebbles and large stones; yet here were ten or twelve Indians swimming for their amusement. Whenever a surf broke near them, they dived under it, and rose again on the other side. The stern of an old canoe added much to their support; this they took before them, and swam out with it as far as the outermost breach; when two or three getting into it, and turning the square end to the breaking wave, were driven in toward the shore with incredible rapidity, sometimes almost to the beach; but generally the wave broke over them before they got half way, in which case they dived, and rose on the other side with the canoe in their hands, and swimming out with it again, were again driven back. They thus continued a considerable time, to the surprise of captain Cook, without attempting to come on shore, but seemed to enjoy the sport in the highest degree.

In other countries the men cut their hair short, and the women pride themselves in its length; but here the women always cut it short round their ears, and the men, except the fishers, who are almost continually in the water, suffer it to spread over their shoulders, or tie it up in a bunch on the top. They have the custom of discolouring the skin, by pricking it with a small instrument, the teeth of which are dipped into a mixture of a kind of lamp-black; and this is called tattowing. This is performed upon the youth of both sexes, when they are about twelve or fourteen years of age, on several parts of the body, and in various figures. The women are generally marked in the form of an Z, on every joint of their fingers and toes, and frequently round the outside of their feet. The men are also marked with the same figure; and both men and women

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

A young Woman of Otaheite bringing a present.

Dublin Published by J. Christie. 17, Rose Lane.

have squares, circles, crescents, ill-designed representations of men, birds or dogs, and various other devices impressed upon their legs and arms. But the part on which these ornaments are most lavished, is the breech, which in both sexes is covered with a deep black; above which arches are drawn one over another, as high as the short ribs. They are often a quarter of an inch broad, and the edges are not straight lines, but indented. The face, however, is generally left unmarked.

Their clothing consists of cloth or matting of different kinds. The cloth, which will not bear wetting, they wear in dry weather, and the matting when it rains. The dress of the women of rank consists of several pieces: one piece, about two yards wide, and eleven yards long, they wrap several times round their waist, so as to hang down like a petticoat as low as the middle of the leg: two or three other pieces, about two yards and a half long, and one wide, each having a hole cut in the middle, they place one upon another, and then putting the head through the holes, bring the long ends down before and behind, they remaining open at the sides to give liberty to the arms; they are gathered round the waist, and confined with a sash of thinner cloth. The dress of the men is the same, except that instead of suffering the cloth that is wound about their hips to hang down like a petticoat, they bring it between their legs, so as to have some resemblance to a pair of breeches. This is the dress of all ranks of people, only the inferior sorts are obliged to be more thinly clad.

Their dwellings are all built in the wood between the sea and the mountains, no more ground being cleared for each house, than is sufficient to prevent

the rain dropping from the trees upon them. They, therefore, step immediately from the house under the shade, which is the most delightful that can be imagined. It consists of bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts, intersected by paths that lead in all directions from one house to another. Nothing can be more grateful in so warm a climate, nor any thing more beautiful, than these walks. The houses of a middling size are of an oblong square, twenty-four feet long, and eleven wide, with a shelving roof supported on three rows of posts, parallel to each other; one row on each side, and one in the middle. The utmost height within is about nine feet, and the eaves on each side reach to within about three feet and a half from the ground. All the rest is open, no part being inclosed with a wall. The roof is thatched with palm-leaves, and the floor covered some inches deep with soft hay, over which they lay mats; so that the whole is one cushion, upon which they sit in the day and sleep in the night. In some houses, however, there is one stool for the master of the family. Besides this, they have little blocks of wood, the upper side of which is hollowed, and which serve them for pillows. The house is indeed principally used as a dormitory, for in fair weather they eat under the shade of the next tree. The clothes they wear in the day serve them for covering by night; and the floor, which is the common bed of the whole household, is not divided by any partition.

The chiefs have, however, houses of another kind, in which there is some degree of privacy. These are so small as to be carried about in their canoes, and set up occasionally; they are inclosed on the sides with cocoa-nut leaves, but not so close as to exclude the air; and the chief and his wife sleep in them alone.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

G. Shaw sc

A Dance in Otaheite.

There are also houses of a much larger size, built as common receptacles for all the people of a district. Some of these are two hundred feet long, thirty broad, and under the ridge twenty feet high. These, which are built at the common expence of the district, have on one side of them a large area, inclosed with low palisades; yet, like those of separate families, they have no walls. Privacy, indeed, is little wanted among people who have not even the idea of indecency, and who gratify every appetite and passion before witnesses, with no more sense of impropriety or shame, than we feel when we satisfy our hunger at a social board with our family or friends.

In other countries, the girls and unmarried women are supposed to be wholly ignorant of what others, upon some occasions, may appear to know; and their conduct and conversation are consequently restrained within narrower bounds, and kept at a more remote distance from whatever relates to a connection with the other sex; but here it is just the contrary. Among other diversions, there is a dance called timorodee, which is performed by young girls, whenever eight or ten of them can be collected together, consisting of motions and gestures beyond imagination wanton, in the practice of which they are brought up from their earliest childhood, accompanied by words, which, if it were possible, would more explicitly convey the same ideas. In these dances they keep time with an exactness, which is scarcely excelled by the best performers upon the stages of Europe. But the practice which is allowed to the virgin, is prohibited to the woman from the moment that she has put these hopeful lessons in practice, and realized the symbols of the dance.

It cannot be supposed that, among these people, chastity is held in much estimation. It might be expected that sisters and daughters would be offered to strangers, either as a courtesy, or for reward; and that breaches of conjugal fidelity, even in the wife, should not be otherwise punished than by a few hard words, or perhaps a slight beating, as indeed is the case: but there is a scale in dissolute sensuality, which these people have ascended, wholly unknown to every other nation, whose manners have been recorded from the beginning of the world to the present hour, and which no imagination could possibly conceive.

A very considerable number of the principal people of Otaheite, of both sexes, have formed themselves into a society, in which every woman is common to every man; thus securing a perpetual variety, as often as their inclination prompts them to seek it, which is so frequent, that the same man and woman seldom cohabit together more than two or three days.

These societies are distinguished by the name of arreoy; and the members have meetings, at which no other is present, where the men amuse themselves by wrestling, and the women, notwithstanding their occasional connection with different men, dance the timorodee in all its latitude, as an incitement to desires, which, it is said, are frequently gratified upon the spot. This, however, is comparatively nothing. If any of the women happen to be with child, which in this manner of life happens less frequently than if they were to cohabit only with one man, the poor infant is smothered the moment it is born, that it may be no incumbrance to the father, nor interrupt the mother in the pleasures of her diabolical prostitution. It sometimes indeed happens, that the pas-

tion which prompts a woman to enter into this society, is surmounted when she becomes a mother, by that instinctive affection which nature has given to all creatures for the preservation of their offspring; but even in this case she is not permitted to spare the life of her infant, except she can find a man who will patronise it as his child; if this can be done, the murder is prevented; but both the man and woman, being deemed by this act to have appropriated each other, are ejected from the community, and forfeit all claim to the privileges and pleasures of arreoy for the future; the woman from that time being distinguished by the term whannownow, "bearer of children," which is here a term of reproach; though none can be more honourable in the estimation of wisdom and humanity, of right reason, and every passion that distinguishes the man from the brute.

Their principal manufacture is their cloth, of which there are three kinds, made of the bark of three different trees. The finest and whitest is made of the Chinese paper mulberry-tree; this is worn chiefly by the principal people, and when it is dyed red, takes a better colour. A second sort, inferior in whiteness and softness, is made of the bread-fruit tree, and is chiefly worn by the inferior people; and a third, of a tree that resembles the fig, which is coarse and harsh, and of the colour of the darkest brown paper; this, though it is less pleasing both to the eye and the touch, is the most valuable, because it resists water, which the other sorts will not.

Another considerable manufacture is matting, some of which is finer, and in every respect better, than any we have in Europe. The coarser sort serves them to sleep upon, and the finer to wear in wet weather.

They are likewise very dexterous in making wicker-work: their baskets are of a thousand different patterns, many of them exceeding neat.

They have candles made of a kind of oily nut, which they stick one over another upon a skewer thrust through the middle of them: the upper one being lighted, burns down to the second, at the same time consuming that part of the skewer which goes through it: the second taking fire, burns in the same manner down to the third, and so of the rest. These candles give a tolerable light; and some of them will burn a considerable time.

They make ropes and lines of the bark of the poerou, from the thickness of an inch, to the size of a small pack-thread: with these they make fishing-nets. Of the fibres of the cocoa-nuts they make thread, for fastening together the several parts of their canoes; and of the bark of a kind of nettle, which grows in the mountains, they make the best fishing-lines in the world; with these they hold the strongest and most active fish, as bonetas and albacores, that would snap our strongest silk lines in a minute, though they are twice as thick. They also make a kind of seine of a coarse grass, the blades of which are like flags; these they twist and tie together in a loose manner, till the net, which is about as wide as a large sack, is from sixty to eighty fathoms long: this they haul in shoal smooth water, and its own weight keeps it so close to the ground, that scarcely a single fish can escape. Indeed in every way of taking fish they are very ingenious. They make harpoons of cane, and point them with hard wood, which, in their hands, strike fish more effectually than those which are headed with iron can do in ours.

They have boats of various kinds, from five feet in length to seventy-two; but all of them are extremely narrow; and therefore, whenever they carry sail, they fasten a log of wood to the end of two poles that lie across the vessel, and project from six to ten feet beyond its side, somewhat like what is used by the flying proas of the Ladrone Islands: to this outrigger the shrouds are fastened, and it is essentially necessary in trimming the boat, to prevent its oversetting, when the wind blows fresh. In many of these vessels the head and stern are raised considerably above the body, in a semicircular form; particularly in the stern, which, in the largest boats, is sometimes seventeen or eighteen feet high, though the boat itself is scarcely three. Some of the boats have one mast, and some two, with ornaments of feathers fastened to the top. The sails are all made of matting, and the oars or paddles have a long handle and a flat blade, not unlike a baker's peel.

What is most extraordinary, they have no other tools for felling trees, building these vessels, hewing stone, carving and polishing timber, than an adze of stone, a chissel or gouge of bone, a rasp of coral, and the skin of a fish called a sting-ray, with coral sand as a file or polisher.

Their language is soft and melodious, it abounds with vowels, and is easily pronounced. They divide the year into thirteen moons, and every day into twelve parts, each of two hours, of which six belong to the day and six to the night; and can nearly guess the time of the day by the height of the sun while it is above the horizon.

The people believe in one supreme deity, but at the same time acknowledge a variety of subordinate deities. They offer up their prayers without the use

of idols; and believe the existence of the soul in a separate state, where there are two situations of different degrees of happiness.

Marriage appears to be here nothing more than an agreement between the man and the woman, and in which the priest has no concern.

The manner in which these people treat their dead has been already related; the habit of the principal mourner, and the practice of women striking a shark's tooth into their forehead to express their grief.

Among these people a subordination is established that nearly resembles that early state of every nation in Europe under the feudal system. Their several orders are, earee rahie, which answers to king; earee, baron; manahouni, vassal; and toutow, villain. The earee rahie, or king of each peninsula, is treated with great respect by all ranks, but does not appear to be invested with so much power as the earees exercise in their own districts. These last are lords of one or more of the districts into which each of the peninsulas is divided; of these districts there may be about a hundred in the whole island; and they parcel out their land to the manahounies, who cultivate each his part. The toutows, the lowest class, do all the work, cultivate the land, catch fish, fetch wood and water, and, under the direction of the mistress of the family, dress the victuals. Each of the earees keeps a court, and has a great number of attendants.

The acquiescence which the lower class of people, or toutows, yield to the controul of their chiefs, is well worthy of remark. They are not suffered to taste any animal food, although they are employed in the feeding of it; the little labour that is required

is exacted from them; and they sometimes endure patiently severe blows: and all this passive spirit is preserved, without any power appearing to be lodged in the earee rahie, or earees, to enforce it. The chief ruler does not appear to have any military force whereby to keep the body of his subjects in awe, or to suppress a rising spirit of rebellion if it appeared. He is attended by no guard; the earees who are about his person do not go armed: so that the distinctions of rank maintained in this island, may be supposed to be acquiesced in by the body of the people, merely from that placid temper and milkiness of soul, which pervades the whole community. But the admirable policy of this government is shown, in prohibiting all intermarriages between the children of chiefs and the common people; by which means, every mark of an aspiring spirit among the lower ranks is effectually extinguished: and here there is no such thing as that absolute want, which occasions the miseries and desperation of the lower class in some civilized states.

Their weapons are slings, which they use with great dexterity, and clubs of about six or seven feet long, made of a hard heavy wood. Thus armed, they are said to fight with great obstinacy. The number of inhabitants on the whole island amounts to 204,000, including women and children.

When the Endeavour was about to leave the island, Clement Webb and Samuel Gibson, two marines, both young men, deserted in the night from the ship, and concealed themselves in the mountains inland, being so much delighted with the country, as to be desirous of becoming naturalized Otaheitans, having strongly attached themselves to two girls. It cost Mr. Cook much trouble,

and the loss of a day in sailing, to recover these men, which, however, was effected. Gibson had made a greater proficiency in the language than any seaman on board, which greatly recommended him to the natives.

Among the Indians who associated most with the gentlemen of the ship was Tupia, whom we have already mentioned as the principal officer to Oberea. He was also the chief tahowa, or priest of the island, and of course well skilled in the religion of his country, to which he added a knowledge of navigation, and an acquaintance with the number and situation of the neighbouring islands. When the ship was about to depart, he begged to accompany the gentlemen on their voyage, which request was readily complied with, as by means of a person so intelligent and accomplished, much useful information concerning the customs and manners of these people might be obtained; he therefore went on board, attended by a boy about thirteen years of age, his servant, named Tayeto. When the ship weighed anchor, the Indians on board took their leaves, and wept with a decent and silent sorrow, in which there was something extremely striking and tender. The people in the canoes, on the contrary, seemed to vie with each other in the loudness of their lamentations, in which there was, perhaps, more affectation than real concern. Tupia sustained himself in this scene with a firmness and resolution truly admirable. He wept indeed, but the effort that he made to conceal his tears, concurred with them to do him honour. He sent his last present to Potomai, a favourite mistress of one of the chiefs, and then went with Mr. Banks to the mast-head, waving to the canoes as long as they continued in

sight. On Thursday the 13th of July, 1769, the ship sailed from this agreeable spot, having staid there just three months.

The visits which Europeans have lately made to the islands in the South Sea, would certainly have been productive of the most considerable advantages to the natives, by furnishing them with useful implements, and new species of vegetables and animals, if these services had not been greatly counterbalanced by the mischief introduced. Strong liquors indeed, produced by distillation, of which, by their intercourse with Europeans, the Indians on the American continent are become so immoderately fond, that those baneful draughts are daily destroying their race, and debasing their character, have found no admirers among the tropical islanders; of whom many of higher rank were found to be devoted to an intoxicating liquor before they had seen the face of an European: but an evil equally fatal to health and enjoyment has been spread amongst them. On leaving this island, more than one half of the Endeavour's crew were found to be infected with the venereal disease, which they had contracted during their stay here. It was supposed that the crews of M. de Bougainville's ships had imparted it. The natives distinguished it by a name of the same import with rottenness, but of a more extensive signification. They described, in the most pathetic terms, the sufferings which the first victims to its rage endured, and told Mr. Cook that it caused the hair and the nails to fall off, and the flesh to rot from the bones; that it spread an universal terror and consternation among the inhabitants, so that the sick were abandoned by their nearest relations, lest the calamity should spread by contagion,

and were left to perish alone, in such misery as till then had never been known among them; but there seems to be some reason to hope that they had found out a specific cure for it, as none were seen on whom it had made a great progress; and one who went from the ship infected, returned, after a short time, in perfect health.

CHAP. II.

Description of the Society Islands; manners of the inhabitants; arrival at New Zealand; transactions with the natives; their manners and customs; departure from New Zealand.

DIRECTED by Tupia, Mr. Cook proceeded westward to a cluster of islands, about one or two days sail from Otaheite. On the 15th the weather was hazy, with light breezes and calms succeeding each other, so that no land could be seen, and but little way could be made. During this time Tupia often prayed for a wind, to his god Tane, and as often boasted of his success, which indeed he took a very effectual method to secure, for he never began his address to Tane till he saw a breeze so near that he knew it must reach the ship before his orison was well over. On the 16th of July they came in view of an island named Huaheine. The natives appeared very shy of approaching the ship, but they no sooner saw Tupia on the deck, than they advanced with less diffidence. The king of the island and his wife soon after went on board the ship: at first they were struck with astonishment, and wondered at every thing that was shown them, yet they made no inquiries, and seemed to be satisfied with what was offered to their notice, without searching after

Maguire Sculpt.

Omai's double Canoe & the Ships approaching Huaheine

Dublin Published by J. Christie, 17, Rose Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

other objects of curiosity, with which it was natural to suppose a building of such novelty and magnitude as the ship must abound. The name of this king was Oree; and he proposed, as a proof of his friendship for his new acquaintance, that lieutenant Cook and he should exchange names, which being readily assented to, the Indian was Cookee, for so he pronounced the commander's name, and the other was Oree, for the remainder of the time they were together. In succeeding voyages this has been found to be the greatest instance of good-will and attachment which the kings of these islands can give to a stranger. Hogs were procured here in exchange for hatchets.

The moment Tupia landed on this island, he stripped himself as low as his waist, and desired the surgeon, who accompanied him, to do the same. He then sat down before a numerous assembly of the natives, who were collected together in a large house or shed; for here, as well as at Otaheite, a house consists only of a roof supported upon poles; the rest of the party, by his desire, stood behind. He then began a speech or prayer, which continued about a quarter of an hour; the king, who stood over against him, frequently answering in what appeared to be set responses. In the course of Tupia's harangue, he delivered, at different times, two handkerchiefs, a black silk neckcloth, some beads, two small bunches of feathers, and some plantains, as presents to their Eatua, or god. In return for these, he received from the king a hog, some young plantains, and two small bunches of feathers, for the Eatua of the strangers.—The general sense of religion, which prevails among these islanders, so cut off as they are from all intercourse with the

enlightened part of their species, furnishes a strong proof of the natural tendency of the human mind to acknowledge a first cause, and the existence of a higher order of beings than any visible on this earth, however confused and wild their notions may be concerning that fundamental principle of all religion.

This island was quitted on the 19th of July, and on departing the commander gave the king a small pewter plate, on which was stamped this inscription: "His Britannic majesty's ship Endeavour, lieutenant Cook, commander, 16 July, 1769. Huaheine." He gave him also some medals or counters, resembling the coin of England, which had been struck in the year 1761, together with some other presents; and the king promised that he would not part with any of them, particularly the plate. This island is situated in latitude 16° 43′ south, longitude 150° 52′ west from Greenwich; is distant from Otaheite about thirty-one leagues; its circumference is about seven leagues, and was supposed to have been never before visited by an European. Here is a safe and commodious harbour. The productions of the earth on this spot appeared to be a month forwarder than at Otaheite, for the cocoa-nuts were found full of kernel, and some of the new bread-fruit was fit to eat. Of the cocoa-nuts the inhabitants make a food which they call poe, by mixing them with yams: they scrape both fine, and having incorporated the powder, they put it into a wooden trough, with a number of hot stones, by which an oily kind of hasty-pudding is made, which was relished very well by those on board the ship, especially when it was fried. Here Mr. Banks found no more than eleven or twelve new plants; but he observed some insects, and a species of scorpion, which

he had not seen before. The inhabitants appeared to be larger made, and more stout than those at Otaheite. Mr. Banks measured one of the men, and found him to be six feet three inches and a half high; yet they were so lazy that he could not persuade any one of them to go up the hills with him; they said, if they were to attempt it, the fatigue would kill them. Tupia described these people as not addicted to theft, and he might be right as to their general character, although one of them was detected in the act of pilfering; for the people, when the culprit was seized, gathered round, and were curious to know what crime he had committed, which, when they had learned, they showed strong signs of disapprobation, and sentenced the offender to undergo a good beating, which punishment was immediately inflicted.

The next island which they made for was Ulietea, distant about seven or eight leagues, which they reached in the evening. Two canoes came off, each bringing a woman and a pig. The ladies received each a present of a spike-nail and some beads. Another island to the northward, named Otaha, is separated from this only by a narrow channel. Bolabola is another island, lying to the north-west, and visible from each of these spots. Tupia informed the gentlemen, that the men of this latter island had made a conquest of Ulietea; and eight human jaw-bones were seen tied to the model of a canoe, which was about three feet long, and, by the information obtained from the Otaheitean sage, was understood to be deposited there as a memorial of their invasion and conquest, by the warriors of Bolabola. Here was seen a fig-tree of the same kind with that at Otaheite, the trunk, or rather congeries of the

roots of which, was forty paces in circumference.

On the 24th of July, in going out of the harbour of Ulietea, the ship was in the most imminent danger of striking upon a rock. This island is neither so populous nor so rich in produce as Otaheite, or even Huaheine. The ship afterwards touched at Otaha, where some refreshments were procured. On sailing round these two islands to the northward, the ship having sprung a leak in the powder-room, and being deficient in ballast, so that, by being too light, she could not carry sail before the wind, it became necessary to cast anchor on the western side of Ulietea. The carpenter was so long in stopping the leak, that from hence they did not depart till the 9th of August. On going ashore, in the first house they entered they found some very young women or children, dressed with the utmost neatness, who kept their station, expecting the strangers to come up and make them presents, which they did with great pleasure; for prettier children, or better dressed, they had never seen. One of them was a girl, about six years old; her gown or upper garment was red; a large quantity of plaited hair was wound round her head, an ornament to which they give the name of tamou, and which they value more than any thing they possess. She sat at the upper end of a mat thirty feet long, upon which none of the spectators presumed to set a foot, notwithstanding the crowd; and she leaned upon the arm of a well-looking woman about thirty, who was probably her nurse. The gentlemen went up to her, and as soon as they approached, she stretched out her hand to receive the beads which they offered her, and no princess in Europe could have done it with a better grace. The people were

so much gratified by the presents that were made to these girls, that when Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander returned, the Indians seemed attentive to nothing but how to oblige them; and in one of the houses they were, by order of the master, entertained with a dance, different from any that had been seen before. It was performed by one man, who put upon his head a large cylindrical piece of wicker-work or basket, about four feet long, and eight inches in diameter, which was faced with feathers placed perpendicularly, with the tops bending forward, and edged round with shark's teeth, and the tail feathers of tropic birds. When he had put on this head-dress, which is called a whow, he began to dance, moving slowly, and often turning his head so as that the top of his high wicker-cap described a circle, and sometimes throwing it so near the faces of the spectators as to make them start back: this was held among them as a very good joke, and never failed to produce a peal of laughter, especially when it was played off upon one of the strangers. Here a company of dancers, consisting of two women and six men, with three drums, were seen. Tupia, who appeared to know this island as intimately as his own, said, that they were some of the most considerable people there, who, though they were continually going from place to place, yet did not take any gratuity from the spectators. The women had upon their heads a considerable quantity of tamou, or plaited hair, which was brought several times round the head; in this were stuck, with much taste, the flowers of the cape jessamine, which rendered this head-dress truly elegant. Their necks, shoulders and arms, were naked: upon their hips rested a quantity of

cloth, plaited very full, which fell down below into long petticoats; their feet, which were in a manner concealed by this covering, they moved with as much dexterity as an opera-dancer in Europe; the plaits above the waist were brown and white alternately, the petticoats below were wholly white. In this dress they advanced side-ways, in a measured step, keeping very true time to the drums, which beat briskly and loud; then presently they began to shake their hips, giving the folds of cloth that lay upon them a very quick motion, which was in some degree continued through the whole dance, though the body was thrown into various postures, sometimes standing, sometimes sitting, and sometimes resting on their knees and elbows, the fingers also being moved at the same time with a quickness scarcely to be imagined. Much of the dexterity of the dancers, however, as well as of the entertainment of the spectators, consisted in the wantonness of their attitudes and gestures, which was indeed such as exceeds all description. In Otaheite, where the like lascivious dances are exhibited, we were told, that none but young girls were suffered to perform; for as soon as the virgin thus initiated in the mysteries of love, becomes practically acquainted with its rites, she is disqualified for performing in these inflaming exhibitions. The resemblance between the music and dances of this country, and that of Hindostan, is very strong: their excellence in keeping time, the lasciviousness of the entertainment, and the youth of the performers, perfectly agree; but they differ in this, that women of the highest rank perform in the dances here, whilst it is made a distinct profession there; chastity also, which in one country is considered as an indispen-

sable quality, is utterly renounced in the other. One of the girls who performed here, had in her ears three pearls, one of which was very large, but so foul that it was of little value. Nothing that was offered could induce her to part with them, and they were spoiled by drilling. Between the dances of the women, the men performed a kind of dramatic interlude, in which there was dialogue as well as dancing; but for want of knowing the language, the subject could not be traced. Whilst on this island, I received a present of the largest piece of cloth I had ever seen, it being fifty yards long, which came from the great king of Bolabola, whose name was Opoony; the title which he bore in the language of the country was earee rahie. This conqueror of Ulietea, and terror of all the neighbouring islands, happened at that time to be on his newly-acquired territory, which being signified to the gentlemen of the ship, they proceeded to pay their devoirs; but how great was their surprise, when, instead of being introduced to a personage young and vigorous, with an intelligent and glowing countenance, expressive of an enterprising spirit, they approached a poor feeble wretch, withered and decrepid, half blind with age, and absorbed in sluggishness and stupidity.

The strict notions which are entertained of private property in these islands, may be inferred from Tupia pointing out to me, on this western side of Ulietea, certain districts of land which he had possessed, until they were wrested from him by the Bolabolan conqueror; and the inhabitants bore witness to the validity of this claim. In this instance the minister of Oberea did not imitate her gentleness and moderation; for when the ship was sailing

out of the harbour, Tupia strongly urged me to fire a shot towards Bolabola, although it was seven leagues distant; but it is highly probable that he did not know that the destruction caused by great guns was confined to a much shorter distance. I thought proper to comply with this request. Whilst the Endeavour continued about these islands, very little of the ship's provision was expended, a plentiful supply of hogs, fowls, plantains and yams, being obtained: but the accommodation which a considerable live stock was expected to yield in the course to the southward was not realized; for the hogs would not eat European grain of any kind, pulse or bread-dust; and all the fowls were soon seized with a disease, which caused them to hold down their heads between their legs, and in that posture they continued till they died. To these six islands, Ulietea, Otaha, Bolabola, Huaheine, Tubai and Maurua, as they lie contiguous to each other, I gave the general name of Society Islands, not choosing to distinguish them separately by any other names than those by which they were known to the natives. They lie between the latitude of 16° 10′ and 16° 55′ S. and between the longitude of 150° 57′ and 152° W, from the meridian of Greenwich. We quitted them on the 9th of August, 1769.

Continuing our course to the south-south-east, on the 13th we made an island, which was known to Tupia, and called by him Ohetoroa; but as the natives appeared very hostile, and could not be rendered less inimical by the interposition of Tupia, who conversed with them very intelligibly, and as neither harbour nor anchorage could be found, the circuit of the island was made, partly by the ship, and partly by the boat. It lies in latitude 22° 27′ S.

longitude 150° 47′ W. It is thirteen miles in circuit, rather high than low, but neither populous nor fertile, in proportion to the other islands that had been seen in those seas. On the 15th we quitted this island, and continued our course southwardly, in expectation of falling in with a continent which had ever been supposed to exist, and to which speculating geographers had given the name of Terra Australis Incognita. Having proceeded during ten days without any occurrence worth notice, on Friday, the 25th of August, they relieved the dreariness of their cruise in celebrating the anniversary of their leaving England, by taking a Cheshire cheese out of a locker, where it had been carefully treasured up for that occasion, and tapping a cask of porter, which proved to be very good, and in excellent order. On the 29th one of the boatswain's mates got so drunk by swallowing part of a bottle of brandy, which the boatswain had generously supplied him with, that the next morning he died. On the 30th a comet was seen, at one o'clock in the morning; it was a little above the horizon, in the eastern part of the heavens; at about half an hour past four it passed the meridian, and its tail subtended an angle of 42 degrees. We were then in latitude 36° 20′ S. longitude 147° 6′ W. Among others who observed this phenomenon was Tupia, who instantly cried out, that as soon as it should be seen by the people of Bolabola, they would kill the inhabitants of Ulietea, who would with the utmost precipitation fly to the mountains.

On the 1st of September Mr. Cook quitted his southern course, being then passed the fortieth degree of latitude; then passing again to the southward, still keeping a western course, he came to

the latitude of thirty-nine degrees, nearly in which parallel he fell in with the coast of New Zealand. The first on board the ship who descried this welcome sight, was a boy, named Nicholas Young, after whom the commander called the projecting point of land there, Young Nick's Head. The country, as they approached within the distance of seven or eight leagues, appeared very extensive, and presented four or five ranges of hills, rising one over the other, and a chain of mountains above these, which appeared to be of a stupendous height. It soon became the general opinion that they had actually found the supposed continent. No water was to be obtained here but such as was brackish. Many of the natives appeared, whom Tupia addressed, and, to the great satisfaction of all on board, he was perfectly understood, as he and the natives were found to speak only different dialects of one common language: but the fierceness and animosity of these Indians were not to be mollified. Iron, which in the South Sea Islands had been found to be as effectual a conciliator of affection as gold elsewhere, was here held in no estimation, as not the smallest idea was conceived of its use. Their attacks were made in so formidable a manner, and muskets fired over their heads having no effect, the cockswain was at length obliged to discharge his piece at four men, who attempted to seize a boat, one of whom he shot through the heart. Notwithstanding which, Mt. Cook and a party, the next day, proceeding along the shore in a boat, to search for water, were so furiously assaulted by seven Indians in a canoe, that, after having fired over their heads without impressing them with any fear, the party was obliged, in self-defence, to avail them-

selves to the utmost of their superiority, by which four of the Indians were slain. Two boys, who were in the canoe, were made prisoners, and by kind treatment and attention soon became perfectly easy and happy on board the ship. They were afterwards made use of to bring about a reconciliation between the natives and the strangers, and some presents were made; but not a single necessary could be procured, except wood, on which account Mr. Cook gave this place the name of Poverty Bay, and quitted it on the 12th.

It would be a tedious and unimportant employment to follow this persevering navigator minutely in his circuit of this country, in which he was employed six months within six days. Though he cannot claim the merit of having first discovered it, yet he has so accurately surveyed it, and, by a variety of observations made in different parts, has so exactly ascertained the latitude and longitude, that the fullest and most satisfactory information is obtained concerning a part of our globe, which it is highly probable may in future ages be colonized either from Europe or America, and become populous and considerable.

At first our navigator proceeded to the southward, but contrary winds constrained him to reverse his course, and trace the country to the northward. When he had weathered that promontory by which the eastern shores of New Zealand are bounded towards the north, and which received from him the name of Cape East, he proceeded along that side of the island which looks northward; here he had an opportunity of examining a very curious fortification, to which the natives retreat when they are invaded by a superior force of their enemies. It

was erected on a high point or peninsula, projecting into the sea. The natives call these fastnesses eppah or heppa, and, says Mr. Cook, the best engineer in Europe could not have chosen a situation better adapted to enable a small number to defend themselves against a greater. The steepness of the cliffs rendered it wholly inaccessible from the sea, which inclosed it on two sides; and to the land it was fortified by a double ditch, and a bank raised on the inside. The whole was executed with great judgment. It was inclosed by a pallisade about ten feet high, consisting of strong pales bound together with withes. The natives called this heppah by the name of Wharretowa. Great quantities of darts and stones were laid up ready for annoying assailants; and a store of fern-root, which these Indians eat as bread, and dried fish, lay in heaps to furnish provisions in case of a siege; but no fresh water was seen nearer than a brook which ran close under the foot of the hill. The perpetual hostility in which these poor savages, who have made every village a fort, must necessarily live, will account for there being so little of the land in a state of cultivation; and as mischiefs very often reciprocally produce other, it may perhaps appear, that these being so little land in a state of cultivation, will account for their living in perpetual hostility. The quantity of fish procured here was prodigious; and beds of very fine oysters yielded such a profuse abundance, that the ship might have been loaded with them in one tide. The natives, for a few pieces of cloth, sold as much fish, of the mackarel kind, as served the whole ship's company. An old Indian, named Toiava, who seemed to be of superior rank, behaved with great prudence and honesty; those of the

G. Shee sc

A Hippa, or Place of Retreat in New Zealand & a War Canoe.

Dublin, Published by J. Christie, 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

lower sort frequently gave a loose to the most open and daring insolence. On the 9th of November, Mr. Cook and Mr. Green went on shore to observe a transit of Mercury: the weather was remarkably favourable, for not a cloud intervened during the whole transit. Whilst the party remained there, Mr. Gore was commanding officer; and two very large canoes came to the side of the ship, one of which had forty-seven men on board, all armed with pikes, darts and stones; after having behaved in a menacing manner for some time, they at length began to trade; some of them offered their arms, and one man tendered a square piece of cloth, which makes a part of their dress, and is called a haahow. Mr. Gore having agreed for this ornament, sent down the price, which was a piece of British cloth, and expected to have the purchase delivered; but the Indian had no sooner got the cloth in his possession, than he refused to part with his own, and put off in his canoe. Upon being threatened for this fraud, he and his companions began to sing their war-song in defiance, and shook their paddles; still, however, they began no attack, only defied Mr. Gore to take any remedy in his power; which so provoked him, that he levelled his musket, loaded with ball, at the offender, while he was holding the cloth in his hand, and shot him dead. The provocation was indeed great, but the revenge was beyond all proportion to the crime. The Indians who were with the party on shore, when they heard the rumour of this transaction, retired in a body, but in a short time after returned, having received a more particular account of the affair, and intimated that they thought the man who had been killed deserved his fate. A strong proof that ideas

of right and wrong are derived from nature, not acquired by education. But though they seemed to be very sensible that their countryman had acted criminally, they probably disguised their real sentiments, and accommodated themselves to their situation with as much address as an European hackneyed in the trammels of deceit could have done; for when the ship was about to sail from this bay, Mr. Cook learned from Toiava, that a general resentment prevailed among the Indians on account of this murder.

Great quantities of iron sand were found thrown upon the shore in several parts of this bay. This sand is brought down by every rivulet of fresh water that finds its way from the country, which is a demonstration that there is ore of that metal not far inland; yet neither the inhabitants of these parts, nor of any other which had then been visited, knew the use of iron, or set the least value upon it, all of them preferring the most worthless and useless trifle, not only to a nail, but to any tool of that metal.

Upon one of the trees near the watering-place was cut the ship's name, and that of the commander, with the date of the year, and the month in which they touched there; and after displaying the English colours, Mr. Cook took a formal possession of it in the name of his Britannic majesty, George III.

The inhabitants here, though numerous, do not make so good an appearance as those who were seen on the eastern coast; they have no plantations; their canoes are mean and without ornament; they sleep in the open air; and do not acknowledge Terata, whom the other Indians spoke of as their king; on the contrary, they said, that if he was to

come among them he would kill them. From whence it was inferred, that these people were vagrants and outlaws; yet they signified that they had heppahs, or strong holds, to which they retired in times of imminent danger. These people inhabit a peninsula about seventy miles in length, but very narrow, in the centre of which, to the north-eastward, lies Mercury Bay; to the south-westward it is detached from the main by a noble river, which there discharges itself into the sea. Mr. Cook explored this river with great care. Its banks were adorned with lofty trees, one of which was found to measure nineteen feet eight inches in the girth, at the height of six feet above the ground; it was found by a quadrant to be eighty-nine feet high, was perfectly straight, and was supposed to contain three hundred and sixty-six feet of solid timber, exclusive of the branches. As he advanced he saw many others that were still larger: a young one was cut down, the wood of which proved heavy and solid, not fit for masts, but such as would make the finest planks in the world. This river was named the Thames, it having some resemblance to the river of that name in England: at the height to which he proceeded it was as broad as the Thames at Greenwich, and the tide of flood was as strong; it was not indeed quite so deep, but had water enough for vessels of more than a middle size.

An Indian, who came on board the ship whilst in this station, was detected in stealing a half-minute glass, which was in the binnacle; for which offence Mr. Hicks, who then commanded, Mr. Cook being on shore, ordered him to be taken to the gangway, and there to receive ten lashes with the cat-o-nine-tails: after the punishment was inflicted, and the

criminal was unbound, an old man among the spectators, who was supposed to be his father, gave him a hearty beating, and sent him down into his canoe. But this stern justice of the father was not adopted by those who were present; for hereupon all the canoes dropped astern, and the people in them expressed a fear of coming any more near the ship; however, such a chastisement was certainly very proper.

Sea-bream were caught here with the line, to the amount of near a hundred; they weighed from six to eight pounds apiece, and furnished food for the whole ship's company for two days, on which account the place was called Bream Bay.

The black stains with which the New Zealanders mark their bodies and faces, they call Amaco. Those to the northward are more marked, having generally a broad spiral on each buttock, and the thighs of many of them were almost entirely black, some narrow lines only being left untouched; so that at the first sight they appeared to wear striped breeches. One of the instruments which are used to stain the body was shown by an Indian, and it was found exactly to resemble those which are employed for the same purpose at Otaheite. Here too was seen the morus papyrefera, of which these people, as well as those of Otaheite, make cloth; but here the plant appeared to be rare, and no piece of cloth was seen large enough for any use, but to wear by way of ornament in the ears.

Whilst in these parts, Mr. Cook, Mr, Banks and Dr. Solander, attended by some marines, went on shore on an island, where they were attacked by a large body of the natives, whom, however, they repelled, by first firing small shot, and then discharg-

ing ball over their heads; the officers too, who commanded on board the ship, seeing the natives collecting in great numbers, brought the great guns to bear, and by firing a few harmless shots effectually intimidated the whole body, who undoubtedly had formed a design of cutting off the party on shore. On this occasion, Mr. Cook informs us, that only two of the Indians were hurt by the small shot, and not a single life was lost. When the undaunted and fierce disposition of these savages is considered, it is matter of astonishment how such an attack could be repelled without bloodshed; nor would it have had that happy termination, had not the commander exerted his utmost authority in repressing the men, who, as he himself expresses it, "either through fear, or the love of mischief, showed as much impatience to destroy the natives, as a sportsman does to kill his game." He adds, "Some of our people, who, when the Indians were to be punished for a fraud, assumed the inexorable justice of Lycurgus, thought fit to break into one of their plantations, and dig up some potatoes; for which offence I ordered each of them to be punished with twelve lashes: after which two of them were discharged; but the third insisting that it was no crime for an Englishman to plunder an Indian plantation, though it was a crime in an Indian to defraud an Englishman of a nail, I ordered him back into his confinement, from which I would not release him until he had received six lashes more."

On the 5th of December the ship was becalmed, and the tide or current setting strong, she drove towards land so fast, that, before any measures could be taken for her security, she was within a cable's length of several breakers: the pinnace was imme-

diately hoisted out to take the ship in tow, and the men, sensible of their danger, exerted themselves to the utmost; at the same time a faint breeze sprung up off the land, and the ship made head-way. Soon after this hair-breadth escape from destruction, the ship suddenly struck, but happily went off immediately without receiving any damage.

When some of the natives were shown the ship's seine, they expressed their contempt by laughter, and exultingly produced their own, which was indeed of an enormous size, and made of a kind of grass which is very strong; it was five fathoms deep, and, by the room it took up, it could not be less than three or four hundred fathoms long.

Fishing indeed seemed to be the chief business of life in this part of the country. About all the towns here were seen a great number of nets, laid in heaps, like hay-cocks, and covered with a thatch to keep them from the weather; and in almost every house which was entered, some of the people were seen employed in making nets.

When our voyagers approached towards the northern extremity of the country, Tupia inquired of the natives if they knew of any country beside their own? to which they answered, that they never had visited any other, but that their ancestors had told them, that to the north-west by north, or north-north-west, there was a country of great extent, called Ulimaroa, to which some people had sailed in a very large canoe; that only part of them returned, and reported, that after a passage of a month they had seen a country where the people eat hogs. Tupia then inquired whether these adventurers brought any hogs with them when they returned? They said, No. "Then," replied the Otaheitean,

your story is certainly false; for it cannot be believed that men who came back without hogs from an expedition, had ever visited a country at which they were to be procured." Mr. Cook, however, observes, that it is remarkable, notwithstanding the shrewdness of Tupia's objection, that when these people mentioned hogs, it was not by description but by name, calling them booah, the name by which they are known in the South Sea islands; but if the animal had been wholly unknown to them, and they had no communication with people to whom it was known, they could not possibly have been acquainted with the name.

On the 17th of December Mr. Cook reached the north-eastern extremity of this country, which he called North Cape, and found to lie in latitude 34° 22′ S. longitude 173° 5′ E. The north-western point, which is no more than twenty miles distant, the country stretching out into a very narrow peninsula, was visited by Tasman, and called by him Cape Maria Van Diamen. Soon after this promontory was passed, whilst our navigator was proceeding to the southward, and had got into the 35th degree of latitude, on New-Year's Day, 1770, the midsummer of that hemisphere, the ship was attacked by a gale of wind, which for its strength and continuance was such as he had scarcely ever been in before; and he was three weeks in getting ten leagues to the westward, and five weeks in getting fifty leagues. During the gale they were happily at a considerable distance from land, "otherwise," he adds, "it is highly probable that we never should have returned to relate our adventures." On the north-western coast the country wore the most dismal and inhospitable appearance imaginable;

nothing was to be seen but hills of sand, on which scarcely a blade of verdure sprung up; and a vast sea, impelled by the westerly winds, broke upon it in a prodigious surf, rendering it not only forlorn but frightful; complicating the ideas of danger and desolation, and impressing the mind at once with a sense of misery and death; which led our commander to keep aloof from the coast. In latitude 37° 43′ the land began to assume a better appearance, rising in gentle slopes, and covered with trees and herbage. In latitude 39° 15′ was seen a peak of vast height, towering above the clouds, and covered with snow; it was named Mount Egmont: it lies near the sea, has a large base, and rises in a gradual descent.

On the 15th of January the ship came to an anchor in an excellent harbour, where an abundant supply of wood and water was at hand: the land here is one vast forest, whilst the sea afforded vast quantities of the finest fish.

The first reception which these navigators received from the natives here was hostile and menacing, as it had been every where upon this coast; but the admirable conduct of the commander, whilst it impressed upon these dauntless defenders of their strand against foreign invasion, a sense of the irresistible power which was opposed to them, made impressions equally strong of the kindness and goodwill of these tremendous strangers. Tupia soon entered into conversation with some of the Indians, who came off from the shore in two canoes; being directed to ask them whether they had ever seen such a vessel as the Endeavour, or had ever heard that such had been upon their coast? both which inquiries were answered in the negative; so that

Maguire Sc.

Man of Cape Diemen.

Dublin. Published by J. Christie 17. Rafs Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

tradition had preserved among them no memorial of Tasman, though the ship was then supposed to lay only fifteen miles to the south of the harbour in which he had anchored, and named Murderer's Bay. A similar inquiry was afterwards made of an old man named Topaa, who returned the same answer; but added, that his ancestors had told him, that there once came to that place a small vessel from a distant country, northward, called Ulimaroa, the name which had before been given to it, in which were four men, who upon their coming on shore were all killed.

The women who were in the canoes that came off, and some of the men, had a kind of head-dress which had not been seen before: it consisted of a bunch of black feathers, made up in a round form, and tied upon the top of the head, which it entirely covered, and made twice as high in appearance as it was in reality.

On entering the harbour the body of a woman was seen floating upon the water, which, to all appearance, had been dead some days; and the people afterwards informed those who inquired concerning it, that she had died a natural death, and, according to their custom, they had tied a stone to the body, and thrown her into the sea, which stone they supposed had been disengaged by some accident.

Several circumstances had occurred, in the course of the navigation round the northern part of this country, to fix a suspicion that these people preyed on human flesh, and a most indubitable proof of this practice prevailing among them was obtained here; for when a party from the ship, consisting of the commander, Mr. Banks and others, went on shore the day after their arrival, on examining one

6279

of the baskets in which these Indians deposit their provisions, two bones were seen, which, on close inspection, were found to be those of a human body, the flesh of which had been pretty cleanly picked, but so much remained as to make it manifest that the limbs had been dressed by fire; and in the gristles at the end were the marks of the teeth which had gnawed them. Upon inquiries being made respecting this horrid practice, the Indians, without the least hesitation, and with as much unconcern as if relating the most trivial fact, assured the gentlemen, to whom Tupia acted as interpreter, that about five days before the arrival of the Endeavour, a boat, belonging to their enemies, came into the bay, with many persons on board; and that the man, whose bones had been seen, was one of seven whom they had killed and eaten: to gain the fuller credit to what he asserted, he took hold of his own arm with his teeth, and made a show of eating; he also bit and gnawed the bone which Mr. Banks held in his hand, drawing it through his mouth, and showing by signs that it afforded a delicious repast. The head is the only part on which these cannibals do not feed, and from that they extract the brains. Old Topaa afterwards brought four of the heads of the seven people who had been thus devoured, on which the hair was entire, as was also the flesh, which was soft, but it had by some means been preserved from putrefaction. Mr. Banks purchased one of them, but the old man sold it with great reluctance, and could not by any means be prevailed on to part with a second. They are probably preserved as trophies, like scalps in North America, and jaw-bones in the South Sea islands. The Indians farther informed Tupia, that it was

only their enemies slain in battle that they thus devour. In the wars which are maintained here no quarter is given. Among the persons who composed the family where this savage festival had been celebrated, was a woman, who had her arms, legs and thighs, frightfully cut in several places; and the gentlemen were told, that she had inflicted these wounds upon herself, in token of her grief for the loss of her husband, who had been lately killed and eaten by their enemies, in another descent which they had made. But to quit this chilling subject.

The ship lay at somewhat less than a quarter of a mile distant from the shore, and in the morning those on board were awakened by the singing of the birds, the number of which was incredible, and they seemed to strain their throats in emulation of each other. This wild melody surpassed any thing of the kind which had been heard; it seemed to be like small bells, most exquisitely tuned; and perhaps the distance and intervening water might be no small advantage to the sound. Upon inquiry they were informed, that the birds here always begin to sing about two hours after midnight, and continuing their music until sun-rise, were, like the nightingales in England, silent the rest of the day. Many shags were shot whilst sitting on their nests in the trees, which were eaten both roasted and stewed, and thought good food. On the 19th the armourer's forge was set up, and all hands on board were busy in careening, and other necessary operations about the vessel. Fish were now purchased of the Indians for nails, they having at length acquired some notion of their use; and in this traffic no unfair practices were attempted.

The commander having climbed a hill to view

the trendings of the coast, found that the country which he had encircled was separated from that in which the ship then lay by a strait. On this hill he found a parcel of loose stones, with which he erected a pyramid, and left in it some musket balls, small shot, beads and other things, which were likely to stand the test of time, and not being of Indian workmanship, would convince any European who should come to the place, and pull it down, that other natives of Europe had been there before him. In another place he erected a similar pile of stones, in which he left a piece of silver coin, with some musket-balls and beads, together with a piece of an old pendant flying at the top. The carpenter afterwards prepared two posts, which were left as a memorial of the Endeavour having visited the place: they were inscribed with the ship's name, and the year and month in which she arrived in that harbour. On the top of one of them was hoisted the union flag. The natives readily assented to all this being done, and promised that they would not pull them down; but in that particular they do not appear to have kept their word. Our commander at the same time honoured this inlet with the name of Queen Charlotte's Sound, and taking formal possession of this and the adjacent country, in the name, and for the use, of the king of Great Britain, the company present afterwards drank a bottle of wine to the queen's health, and gave the bottle to old Topaa, who was highly delighted with the present. The entrance of this sound is in latitude 41° S. longitude 175° 15′ E. The land about it consists entirely of high hills and deep valleys; these hills are of such a height, that they were seen at the distance of twenty leagues; the country is well

stored with excellent timber, fit for all purposes except masts, for which it is too hard and heavy. The number of inhabitants scarcely exceeded four hundred, who lived dispersed along the shore. On any appearance of danger they retire to their heppahs or forts. In comparison with the inhabitants of the other parts of this country, they are poor, and their canoes are without ornament. They had scarce any thing else but fish to dispose of: at first they were very fond of paper; but when they found that it would spoil by being wet, they would take no more; neither did they set much value upon the cloth of Otaheite, but English broad-cloth and red kersey were in high estimation.

On the 30th of January, early in the morning, Mr. Cook sent a boat to one of the islands near the harbour for celery, and while the people were gathering it, about twenty of the natives, men, women and children, landed near some empty huts: as soon as they were ashore, five or six of the women sat down upon the ground together, and began to cut their legs, arms and faces, with shells, and sharp pieces of talc or jasper, in a terrible manner: it was understood that their husbands had lately been killed by their enemies; but while they were performing this horrid ceremony, the men set about repairing the huts with the utmost negligence and unconcern.

Old Topaa informed the gentlemen, that the country consisted of two whennuas or islands: that on which they were he called Tovy Poenammoo, the literal translation of which is, the water of green talc; and Mr. Cook thinks, if he could have been better understood, it might have been found that this was the name of some particular place where

the natives procured their green talc or stone, of which they make their ornaments, and not a general name for the whole southern district. The northern island he called Eaheinomauwe; and to the land on the borders of the strait he gave the name of Tiera Witte.

Mr. Cook quitted Queen Charlotte's Sound on the 6th of February, 1770. In sailing out, the ship was carried by the rapidity of the tide close upon one of the islands, which was a rock, rising almost perpendicularly out of the sea: their danger increased every moment, and the only expedient to prevent the ship being dashed to pieces, as she was within little more than a cable's length of the rock, was, to drop an anchor, which was but an improbable means of saving them, as they were then in seventy-five fathoms water; however, upon veering about a hundred and fifty fathoms of cable, the ship was happily brought up. But this would not have been accomplished time enough to have saved her, if the tide, which set S. by E. had not, upon meeting with the island, changed its direction to S. E. and carried the bark beyond the foremost point.

Mr. Cook at first proceeded along the eastern coast of the northern island, until he came within sight of the cape, which had before terminated his progress in a southern direction, on which account he had named it Cape Turn-again. He himself was quite satisfied concerning that part which remained unexplored; but some of his officers had started a doubt, whether Eaheinomauwe was an island, as the land might possibly stretch away to the south-east from between Cape Turn-again to the southern extremity of the coast, which had been named Cape Palliser, and which included a space of between

twelve and fifteen degrees. In this course some Indians came on board, whose behaviour was courteous and friendly. They had no sooner entered the ship, than they asked for whow, the name by which nails were known among the people with whom our voyagers had trafficked: but though they had heard of nails, it was found that they had seen none; for when some were given them, they asked Tupia what they were? Whow is the name by which they distinguish a tool, commonly made of bone, which these people use both as an auger and a chissel; but what they did know of iron showed that their intercourse extended not less than forty-five leagues to the northward, which was the nearest distance at which the Indians had made any exchanges with those on board the ship, and their information must have been obtained from some of their own countrymen.

Our commander then proceeded to trace the coast of that island, which was supposed to bear the name of Poenammoo. On the 1st of March he had reached the 48th degree of latitude, his longitude at the same time being 172 degrees E. in the course of which navigation he fell in with an island about twenty-four leagues in compass; it was called Banks's Island, and is situated in latitude 43° 22′ S. longitude 173° 30′ E. Our navigator took a short departure from the coast of New Zealand, which turns in a western direction. As the south-west swell continued, Mr. Cook was confirmed in the opinion that there was no land in that quarter; he therefore desisted from any further pursuit, and standing to the northward regained the southern extremity of the coast. On the 9th a ledge of rocks was discovered under the ship's bow, upon which

the sea broke very high, at no more than three quarters of a mile distant, and when they had five and forty fathoms water. A sudden change of the wind to the northward enabled them to get clear of this threatening appearance: the danger was imminent, and the escape critical in the highest degree. From the situation of these rocks, so well adapted to catch unwary strangers, Mr. Cook called them the Traps, latitude 47° 21′. They lie somewhat to the southeastward of the extreme point of land of New Zealand, which was called Cape South, latitude 47° 19′ S. longitude 167° 48′ E. A small island, consisting of a barren rock, about a mile in circuit and five leagues from the main, was seen soon after they arrived on the western coast, which was called after Dr. Solander. West Cape lies in latitude 45° 54′ S. longitude 166° 43′ E. so that the western extremity of this southern island projects near six degrees farther than that of the northern island. A range of mountains is supposed to extend nearly the whole length of Poenammoo: these were in one part called The Southern Alps, and in another, The Snowy mountains. Dusky Bay lies three leagues to the northward of West Cape. A prospect more rude, craggy and desolate, cannot be conceived, than that which this country affords from the sea: as far inland as the eye can reach, nothing appears but the summits of rocks, which stand so near together, that instead of valleys, there are only fissures between them. From the latitude of 44° 20′ to 42° 8′, these mountains lay farther inland, and the seacoast consists of woody hills and valleys, with much appearance of fertility. March 28th, Mr. Cook anchored to replenish his water-casks, having thirty tons of empty casks on board, in which employment

G Shea sc.

Family in Dusky Bay, New Zealand.

Dublin, Published by J. Christie 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

the men were engaged until the 30th. The place which afforded this accommodation was named Admiralty Bay, which lies at a small distance from Queen Charlotte's Sound, in the narrow sea which divides this country into two islands, and which received the name of Cook's Straits.

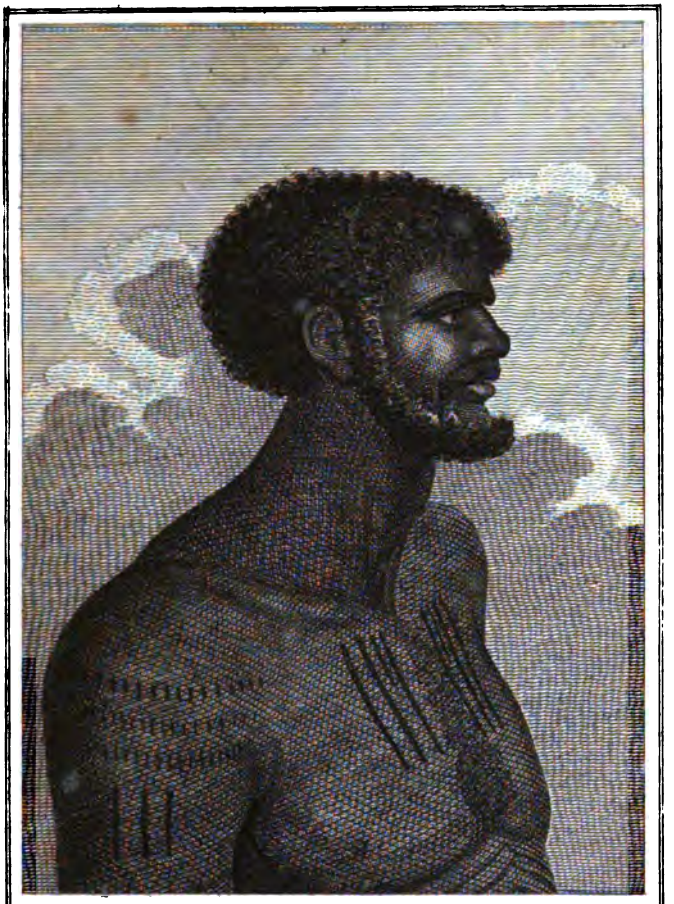
Whilst here, Mr. Banks examined several of the stones which lay upon the beach, and were full of veins: they had a mineral appearance, but he did not discover any thing in them which he knew to be ore. In sailing round the southern coast, a number of white patches had been seen, which Mr. Cook supposed to be white marble, as they reflected the sun's rays very strongly; but Mr. Banks was of opinion that they were a mineral substance; and, considering the correspondence of latitude between this place and South America, it is not improbable but, by a proper examination, something very valuable might be found. No part of the country but the sea-coast appeared to be inhabited, and even there the people were found to be thinly scattered, and the number of inhabitants bore no proportion to the extent of the country: the whole of the western coast appeared to be quite deserted of people. On the 31st of March they had lost sight of New Zealand, on which account the point of land that then appeared was called Cape Farewell.

CHAP. III.

The navigation of the eastern coast of New Holland. A most astonishing escape from shipwreck. The discovery of Endeavour Straits; passage to Batavia; and return of the ship to England.

ON the 19th of April, 1770, our navigator made the coast of New Holland, in latitude 38°, longi-

tude 148° 53′ E. The spot first seen received the name of Point Hicks, as the first lieutenant, who bore that name, was the discoverer of it. The body of Van Diemen's Land, according to the account given by Tasman in his journal, published by Rembrantze, ought to have borne due south, but no land was to be seen; and as the coast trended N.E. and S.W. Mr. Cook could not determine whether it joined to Van Diemen's Land or not. Some of the natives were seen; but on the approach of a boat towards the shore they fled, and could not be induced to enter into any intercourse with their visitants. Tupia, who had now become a good marksman, frequently strayed by himself up the country to shoot parrots, in one of which rambles he met with nine Indians, who, as they perceived he saw them, ran away in great confusion and terror. Fish were caught on this coast in great abundance, and among the rest a sting-ray, which weighed no less than 240 pounds, after its entrails were taken out. The canoes here were found very much to resemble the smaller sort in New Zealand. Some of the Indians made a very singular appearance; for their faces seemed to have been dusted with a white powder, and their bodies painted with streaks of the same colour, which, passing obliquely over their breasts and backs, looked not unlike the cross-belts worn by our soldiers; the same kind of streaks were also drawn round their legs and thighs, like broad garters: each man held in his hand a weapon like a scimetar, about two feet and a half long. The place where the ship had anchored was abreast of a small village, consisting of about six or eight houses; and while the boat was hoisting out, they saw an old woman, followed



A Man of New Holland, tattooed

G. Shea. sc.

Dublin: Published by J. Christie. 17 Ross Lane

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

lie upon her oars. We then parleyed by signs for about a quarter of an hour; and to bespeak their good-will, I threw them nails, beads and other trifles, which they took up, and seemed to be well pleased with. I then made signs that I wanted water, and by all the means that I could devise endeavoured to convince them that we would do them no harm. They now waved to us, and I was willing to interpret it as an invitation; but upon our putting the boat in, they came again to oppose us. One appeared to be a youth about nineteen or twenty, and the other a man of middle age. As I had now no other resource, I fired a musket between them: upon the report, the youngest dropped a bundle of lances upon the rock, but recollecting himself in an instant, he snatched them up again with great haste. A stone was then thrown at us, upon which I ordered a musket to be fired with small shot, which struck the eldest upon the legs, and he immediately ran to one of the houses, which was distant about a hundred yards. I now hoped that our contest was over, and we immediately landed: but we had scarcely left the boat, when he returned; and we then perceived that he had left the rock only to fetch a shield or target for his defence. As soon as he came up, he threw a lance at us, and his comrade another: they fell where we stood thickest, but happily hurt nobody. A third musket with small shot was then fired at them, upon which one of them threw another lance, and both immediately ran away. If we had pursued, we might probably have taken some of them; but Mr. Banks suggesting that the lances might be poisoned, I thought it not prudent to venture into the woods. We repaired immediately to the huts,

in one of which we found some children, who had hidden themselves behind a shield and some bark: we peeped at them, but left them in their retreat, without their knowing that they had been discovered; and we threw into the house when we went away, some beads, ribbons, pieces of cloth and other presents, which we hoped would procure us the good-will of the inhabitants when they should return: but the lances which we found lying about, we took away with us, to the number of about fifty. They were from six to fifteen feet long, and all of them had four prongs, in the manner of a fish-gig, each of which was pointed with fish-bone, and very sharp.

We observed that they were smeared with a viscous substance of a green colour, which favoured the opinion of their being poisoned, though we afterwards discovered that it was a mistake. They appeared, by the sea-weed that was found sticking to them, to have been used in striking fish. Upon examining the canoes that lay upon the beach, we found them to be the worst we had ever seen. They were between twelve and fourteen feet long, and made of a tree in one piece, which was drawn together, and tied up at one end, the middle being kept open by sticks, which were placed across them from gunwale to gunwale as thwarts." This boldness of the natives was soon succeeded by an universal terror, created by the experience which they had of the effect of fire-arms, not only by the small shot which had been discharged at the two champions, but likewise by the number of birds which they had seen killed by means of guns. Here was seen a tree, the fruit of which, in colour and shape, resembled a cherry. There are but two kinds of timber-wood

here, both of which are as large, or larger, than the English oak, and one of them has not a very different appearance. This is the same that yields the reddish gum, like sanguis-draconis, and the wood is heavy, hard and dark-coloured, like lignum-vitæ. The other grows tall and straight, something like the pine; and the wood of this, which has some resemblance to the live oak of America, is also hard and heavy. There are a few shrubs, and several kinds of the palm; mangroves also grow in great plenty near the head of the bay. The country in general, as far as it was observed, is level, low and woody. The woods abound with birds of exquisite beauty, particularly of the parrot kind: here are also crows, exactly the same as those in England. About the head of the harbour, where there are large flats of sand and mud, there is great plenty of water-fowl, most of which are species entirely unknown. One of the most remarkable was black and white, much larger than a swan, and in shape somewhat resembling a pelican. On these banks of sand and mud there are great quantities of oysters, muscles, cockles and other shell-fish, which seem to be the principal subsistence of the inhabitants, who go into shallow water with their little canoes, and pick them out with their hands. They were not observed to eat any of them raw, nor do they always go on shore to dress them, for they have frequently fires in their canoes for that purpose. They do not, however, subsist wholly upon this food, for they catch a variety of other fish, some of which they strike with gigs, and some they take with hook and line. All the inhabitants were stark naked; they did not appear to be numerous, or to live in societies, but, like other animals, were scattered about along the

coast, and in the woods. Of their manner of life little is known, as no connection was formed with them, for they never would come near enough for a parley; nor did they touch a single article of all that was left at their huts, and the places they frequented, on purpose for them to take away. At the sight of these Indians, Tupia, with an air of superiority and compassion, shook his head, and said that they were taata enos, (poor wretches.) A midshipman, who had straggled alone into the country, saw an old man and woman, and some little children; they were both grey-headed with age; the hair on the man's head was bushy, and his beard long and rough; the woman's hair was cropped short; and both were stark naked. More to the northward is Hervey's Bay, in which was found a true mangrove, such as grows in the West-Indies, and the first of the kind met with in these seas. In the branches of this mangrove were many nests of a remarkable kind of ant, as green as grass. When the branches were disturbed, they came out in great numbers, and punished the offender by a much sharper bite than the same kind of animal is elsewhere known to give. Upon these mangroves were also seen small green caterpillars in great numbers: their foreheads were thick set with hairs, and they were ranged upon the leaves, side by side, like a file of soldiers, to the number of twenty or thirty together. On touching them, the hair on their bodies was found to have the quality of a nettle, and gave a much more acute, though a less durable pain. More northwardly was found a species of the bustard, as large as a turkey, one of which weighed seventeen pounds and a half. It was generally agreed, by the gentlemen who ate of it, to be the

best bird they had tasted since they left England, and in honour of it they called the inlet Bustard Bay. It lies in latitude 24° 4′ S. longitude 151° 42′ E. Here are oysters in great numbers, and of various kinds: among others, the hammer-oyster, and abundance of small pearl-oysters. And Mr. Cook says, "that if in deeper water there is equal plenty of such oysters at their full growth, a pearl-fishery might be established here to very great advantage."

Thirsty Sound, 22° 10′ south latitude; 149° 42′ east longitude. Upon the branches of gum-trees here were found ants' nests, made of clay, as big as a bushel, something like those described in Sir Hans Sloane's Natural History of Jamaica, Vol. II. p. 221. tab. 258. but not so smooth. The ants which inhabited these nests were small, and their bodies white. On another species of the tree was found a small black ant, which perforated all the twigs, and having worked out the pith, occupied the pipe which had contained it; yet the parts in which this insect had thus formed a lodgment, and in which they swarmed in amazing numbers, bore leaves and flowers, and appeared to be in as flourishing a state as those that were sound. Here were also such a swarm of butterflies, that, for the space of three or four acres, the air was so crowded with them, that millions were to be seen in every direction; at the same time that every branch and twig was covered with others that were not upon the wing. Here was also found a small fish of a singular kind: it was about the size of a minnow, and had two very strong breast-fins. It was found in places quite dry, but did not seem to become languid by the want of water; for when it was approached it leaped away, by the help of the breast-fins, as nimbly as a frog:

when it was found in the water, it frequently leaped out, and pursued its way upon dry ground. From the great difference in the needle when brought on shore, and from other observations that were made, Mr. Cook thinks that there is iron ore in the hills. Along the coast of New South Wales, as it was then called, the sea in all parts conceals shoals, that suddenly project from the shore, and rocks that rise abruptly, like a pyramid, from the bottom, for an extent of twenty-two degrees of latitude, or more than thirteen hundred miles. Off Cape Tribulation, so called from the distress which was endured there, and which lies in 16° 6′ south latitude, 145° 21′ east longitude, our intrepid, and hitherto prosperous adventurers, very narrowly escaped the miseries of shipwreck.

On the 10th of June, 1770, at eleven o'clock at night, the ship suddenly struck against a coral rock, and became immoveable, except by the heaving of the surge, which beat her against the crags of the rock upon which she lay, and caused so violent a concussion, that it was with the utmost difficulty any one on board could stand on his legs. At the dawn of day land appeared at eight leagues distance, without any island in the intermediate space, upon which they might be set on shore by the boats, and afterwards proceed to the main, if the ship should go to pieces; the wind, however, died away, till it became a dead calm, by which she escaped instant and inevitable destruction. At eleven in the forenoon it was high water; but so much short was the day-tide of that in the night, that notwithstanding she had been lightened near fifty tons, she did not float by a foot and a half. Thus disappointed in their expectations, they proceeded to lighten her

still more, by throwing over board every thing that could any ways be spared. The water now began to rush in so fast, that two pumps could scarcely keep her free. At five in the afternoon the tide began to rise, and with it the leak increased so much, that two more pumps were manned, but only one would work; three pumps, however, were kept going, and at nine o'clock the ship righted; but by this time the leak had gained so considerably, that it was imagined she must go to the bottom as soon as she ceased to be supported by the rock: so that the floating of the ship was anticipated, not as an earnest of deliverance, but as an event that would probably precipitate the destruction of all on board. The boats were not capable of carrying all on shore, and when the dreadful crisis of the ship's foundering should arrive, all command and subordination would be at an end; a contest for preference was then likely to ensue, that would increase the horrors even of shipwreck, and terminate, most probably, in the destruction of every soul by the hands of each other; but if any should survive the fate of the ship, a fate yet more melancholy awaited them: without any lasting or effectual defence against the natives, in a country, where even nets and fire-arms would scarcely furnish the means of subsistence, there they would be condemned to languish out the remainder of life in a desolate wilderness, without the possession, or even hope of any domestic comfort, and cut off from all commerce with mankind, except the native savages who prowled the desert, and who are, perhaps, some of the most rude and uncivilized upon the earth. To those only, who have waited in a state of such suspence, death has approached in all his wildest terrors. Every one saw his own sensations

pictured in the countenances of his companions. About twenty minutes after ten o'clock the ship floated, and was heaved into deep water. It was some comfort to find that she did not now admit more water than she had done upon the rock; and though, by the gaining of the leak upon the pumps, there was no less than three feet nine inches water in the hold, yet the men did not relinquish their labour, and held the water as it were at bay: but having now endured excessive fatigue of body, and agitation of mind, for more than twenty-four hours, and having little hopes of succeeding at last, they began to flag. None of them could work at the pumps more than five or six minutes together, and then being totally exhausted, threw themselves down upon the deck, though a stream of water was running over it from the pumps, three or four inches deep. When those who succeeded them had worked their spell, and were exhausted in their turn, they threw themselves down in the same manner, and the others starting up, again renewed their labour. At eleven o'clock a breeze from the sea springing up, the ship was got under sail, and stood for the land. The exact situation of the leak could not be discovered, and therefore it was impossible to stop it within, and it was as impossible to continue that degree of labour by which the pumps had been made to gain upon the leak. In this situation a happy expedient was suggested by Mr. Monkhouse, one of the midshipmen; it is called fothering the ship, and was done by taking a large studding sail, on which a quantity of oakum and wool, chopped small, and mixed together, was stitched down in handfuls as lightly as possible; and over this the dung of sheep and other filth was spread: when the

sail was thus prepared, it was hauled under the ship's bottom by ropes, which kept it extended; and when it came under the leak, the suction which carried in the water, carried in with it the oakum and wool from the surface of the sail, which, in other parts the water was not sufficiently agitated to wash off. This application succeeded so happily, that one pump was able to reduce the water from the leak: and so susceptible are mankind of sudden joy, whenever so partially relieved from imminent danger, that scarcely greater transport could have been felt if they had been arrived in port, than this relief occasioned. At six in the evening the ship was brought to an anchor for the night, in seventeen fathoms water, at the distance of seven leagues from the shore, and one from the ledge of rocks upon which she had struck. The next evening she came to an anchor within two miles of the shore, no harbour having been discovered. The day following was more propitious; a harbour was found about two leagues to leeward, most excellently adapted to the purpose for which it was wanted; and, what was no less fortunate than remarkable, in the whole course of the voyage no place had been seen which would have afforded the same relief to the ship in the situation she then was. Three whole days intervened before a favourable wind arose to carry them into their desired haven, in which time they found leisure and inclination to reflect, that there was nothing but a lock of wool between them and destruction. It is remarkable, that the sea-breezes blew fresh all this time, and it was calm only while the ship lay upon the rock, except once; and even the gale that at length wafted her to the shore, would certainly have beaten her to pieces, if it had

blown whilst she had been so entangled. At length these buffetted heroes set their impatient feet on land, after having given the greatest possible proof of a manly, inflexible firmness; "for," says Mr. Cook, "upon this occasion I must observe, both in justice and gratitude to the ship's company, and the gentlemen on board, that, although in the midst of our distress every one seemed to have a just sense of his danger, yet no passionate exclamations, or frantic gestures, were to be heard or seen; every one appeared to have the most perfect possession of his mind, and every one exerted himself to the utmost, with a quiet and patient perseverance, equally distant from the tumultuous voice of terror, and the gloomy inactivity of despair." Their change of situation was now visible in every countenance, for it was most sensibly felt in every breast. They had sailed no less than three hundred and sixty leagues, without once having a man out of the chains heaving the lead, even for a minute, which perhaps never happened to any other vessel. They had been little less than three months entangled among shoals and rocks, that every moment threatened them with destruction, frequently passing the night at anchor within hearing of the surge that broke over them; sometimes driving towards it even while their anchors were out, and knowing, that if by any accident, to which an almost continual tempest exposed them, they should not hold, every soul on board must, in a few minutes, inevitably perish. On examining the leak, it was found that the rocks had made their way through four planks, and even into the timbers: three more planks were much damaged, and the appearance of these breaches was very extraordinary, for there was not a splinter

to be seen, but all was as smooth as if the whole had been cut away by an instrument. If the timbers had not happily been very close, it would have been impossible to have saved the ship; and yet further, their preservation depended on a circumstance still more remarkable: one of the holes, which was big enough to have sunk the vessel, if eight pumps had been incessantly worked instead of three, was, in a great measure, plugged up by a fragment of the rock, which, after having made the chasm, was broken off, and left sticking in it: so that the water, which at first had gained upon the pumps, was what came in at the interstices, between the stone and the edges of the hole that received it. Several pieces of the fothering likewise, which had made their way between the timbers, were found, in a great measure, to stop those parts of the leak which the stone had left open. But the full degree of danger which they had escaped, was not known till the ship arrived at Batavia, and was hove down; for on examining her bottom, it was found to be in a worse condition than was apprehended. The false keel was all gone to within twenty feet of the stern-post; the main keel was considerably injured in many places; a great quantity of the sheathing was torn off, and several planks were much damaged; two of them, and the half of a third under the main channel, near the keel, were, for the length of six feet, so worn, that they were not above the eighth part of an inch thick, and here the worms had made their way quite into the timbers: yet in this condition she had sailed many hundred leagues, where navigation is as dangerous as in any part of the world. How much misery did those on board escape, by being ignorant that so considerable a part of the

bottom of the ship was thinner than the sole of a shoe, and that every life on board depended upon so slight and fragile a barrier between them and the unfathomable ocean! This ledge or shoal lies in latitude 15° 45′ south.

The river which afforded them relief in this extreme emergency was named Endeavour River. Vast flocks of pigeons and crows were seen; the latter exactly like those in England. The bats here have a frightful appearance, being nearly black, and full as large as a partridge. Here was found an animal of a new species; it is of a light mouse-colour, in size and shape it very much resembles a greyhound; has a long tail; instead of running, it leaps upon its hind-legs like the jerboa, or mus jaculus. The head, neck and shoulders are very small in proportion to the other parts of the body; the tail is nearly as long as the body, thick near the rump, and tapering towards the end; the fore-legs of one, which was a young one, were only eight inches long, and the hind-legs twenty-two; its progress is by successive leaps or hops of a great length, in an erect posture; the fore-legs are kept bent close to the breast, and seemed to be of use only for digging; the skin is covered with a short fur; the head and ears bear a slight resemblance to those of a hare. This animal is called by the natives kanguroo. Mr. Gore killed two of these animals, which proved most excellent food; one of them weighed, without the skin, entrails and head, eighty-four pounds; nor was this animal at its full growth, the innermost grinders not having been formed. Here was found a plant, called in the West Indies Indian kale, which served the ship's company for greens: also many nests of white ants were seen, which re-

sembled those of the East Indies, and are the most pernicious insects in the world. A wolf was said by one of the midshipmen to have been seen, and this account was strengthened by what Tupia saw and described. On the shore were found cockles of so enormous a size, that one of them was more than two men could eat. Very few Indians were seen here, and those that were discovered fled immediately at the approach of their strange guests. After some time, however, an intercourse was brought about. Here were ovens dug in the ground in the same manner as at Otaheite.

The scurvy now began to make its appearance, with many formidable symptoms. Poor Tupia, who had some time before complained that his gums were sore and swelled, and who, by the surgeon's direction, had taken plenty of lemon-juice, had now livid spots upon his legs, and other testimonies that the disease had made a rapid progress, notwithstanding all the remedies used to keep it at bay, among which the bark had been copiously administered. Mr. Green, the astronomer, was also declining. Tupia, whilst on shore, employed himself in angling, and lived entirely upon what he caught: he recovered in a surprising degree, but Mr. Green continued extremely ill. Mr. Banks observed, in many parts of the inlet, large quantities of pumice-stones, which lay at a considerable distance above high water mark. They came from the sea, and were carried either by freshes or extraordinary high tides.

The natives here are of the common stature, but their limbs are remarkably small; their skins are of a dark chocolate colour, which is occasioned by their sleeping in dirt and smoke, to avoid the mos-

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

Maguire Sc.

MAN,

of Prince William's sound.

Dublin Published by J Christie 17 Rose Lane.

chettos, which on this spot are almost insupportably tormenting. Their hair is black, but not woolly, short cropped; in some lank, and in others curled. They paint some part of their bodies red; and one of those that were seen had his upper lip and breast painted white. Their features were good, their eyes lively, their teeth even and white, their voice soft and tunable. They repeated many words after the gentlemen with great facility. The disposition to make the human form, in some respect or other, different from its natural appearance, is prevalent over the whole habitable world. Thus one of the natives seen here was distinguished by an ornament of a very striking appearance; it was the bone of a bird, nearly as thick as a man's finger, and five or six inches long, which he had thrust into a hole made in the gristle that divides the nostrils. They had also holes in their ears, though nothing was then hanging to them, and bracelets upon the upper arm made of hair; so that they seem to be fond of ornament, though they are absolutely without apparel. One of them, to whom captain Cook had given part of an old shirt, instead of throwing it over any part of his body, tied it as a fillet round his head. They seemed to be much pleased, and in no haste to depart; but seeing some of the gentlemen examining their canoe with great attention and curiosity, they were alarmed, and jumping immediately into it, paddled away without speaking a word. The turtle caught here is said to eat better than any brought to England. After some time an intimacy took place, and the Indians came on board the ship with great cordiality. Some of them were very desirous of having a turtle which they saw there; and being refused, both by looks and ges-

tures expressed great disappointment and anger. "At this time," says Mr. Cook, "we happened to have no victuals dressed, but I offered one of them some biscuit, which he snatched and threw overboard with great disdain. One of them renewed his request to Mr. Banks, and upon a refusal stamped with his foot, and pushed him from him in a transport of resentment and indignation. Having applied by turns to almost every person who appeared to have any authority in the ship, without success, they suddenly seized two of the turtles, and dragged them towards the side of the ship where their canoe lay. Our people soon forced them out of their hands, and replaced them with the rest. They would not, however, relinquish their enterprise, but made several other attempts of the same kind, in all which being equally disappointed, they suddenly leaped into their canoe in a rage, and began to paddle towards the shore." At the same time Mr. Cook went into the boat with Mr. Banks, and five or six of the ship's crew, and got on shore before them, where many more of the seamen were engaged in different employments. As soon as the Indians landed they seized their arms, and before the party was aware of their design, they snatched a brand from under a pitch-kettle which was boiling, and making a circuit to the windward of the few things which were on shore, they set fire to the grass in their way with surprising quickness and dexterity. The grass, which was five or six feet high, and as dry as stubble, burned with amazing fury; and the fire made a rapid progress towards a tent of Mr. Banks's, which had been set up for Tupia when he was sick, taking in its course a sow and pigs, one of which it scorched to death. Mr. Banks leaped

into a boat, and fetched some people from on board just time enough to save his tent, by hauling it down upon the beach; but such part of the smith's forge as would burn was consumed. While this was doing, the Indians went to a place at some distance, where several of the crew were washing, and where the nets, among which was the seine and a great quantity of linen were laid out to dry: here they again set fire to the grass, entirely disregarding both threats and entreaties. A musket loaded with small shot was then discharged at one of them, which drew blood at about the distance of forty yards, and this putting them to flight, the fire was extinguished at this place before it had made much progress; but where the grass had been first kindled, it spread into the woods to two miles distance. If this fire had happened a very little while sooner, the consequence must have been dreadful, for the powder had been on board but a few days; and the store-tent, with many valuable things which it contained, had not been removed many hours. The fury with which the grass burned in this hot climate is astonishing. This instance of desperate resentment did not, however, produce a final rupture; matters were accommodated, and peace restored, soon after which some of the ship's crew were sent up the country to gather Indian kale. One of these happening to stray from the rest, suddenly fell in with four Indians, three men and a boy, whom he did not see, till by turning short in the wood he found himself among them. They had kindled a fire, and were broiling something on it: the man being unarmed, was at first greatly terrified; but he had the presence of mind not to run away, judging very rightly, that he was most likely to incur

danger, by appearing to apprehend it. On the contrary, he went and sat down by them, and with an air of chearfulness and good humour, offered them his knife, the only thing he had about him which he thought would be acceptable to them. They received it, and having handed it from one to the other, returned it to him. He then made an offer to leave them, but this they seemed not disposed to permit. Still, however, he dissembled his fears, and sat down again. They considered him with great attention and curiosity, particularly his clothes; then felt his hands and face, and satisfied themselves that his body was of the same texture with their own. They treated him with the greatest civility, and having kept him about half an hour, made signs that he might depart. He did not wait for a second dismission, but when he left them, not taking the direct way to the ship, they came from their fire and directed him; so that they well knew from whence he came. At another time one of the natives, by desire, threw his lance, which was about eight feet long. It flew with surprising swiftness and steadiness; and though it was never more than four feet from the ground, it entered deeply into a tree at fifty paces distance. Mr. Banks took a female animal of the oppossum tribe, and two young ones, which much resembled the remarkable animal of that kind described by M. de Buffon, by the name of phalanger. Several species of serpents were seen here, some of which are venomous, and some harmless. The land fowls here are crows, kites, hawks, cockatoes white and black, a very beautiful kind of parroquet, some parrots, pigeons of different sorts, and several small birds not known in Europe. The water fowls are herons, whistling-ducks, wild geese

and curlews. The face of the country is agreeably diversified by hill and valley, lawn and wood: the soil of the hills is hard, dry and stony; that of the plains is sand and clay. The whole country, both hill and valley, wood and plain, abounds with ant-hills, some of which are six or eight feet high, and twice as much in circumference. The trees here are the gum-tree mangrove. The country is well watered with rivulets and springs. On an island off this coast was found the nest of an eagle, and of some other bird of an enormous size; it was built with sticks upon the ground, and was no less than twenty-six feet in circumference, and two feet eight inches high. Rocks and shoals in this part of the globe are more dangerous than in any other; for here there are reefs of coral rock rising like a wall, almost perpendicularly, out of the unfathomable deep, always overflowed at high water, and at low water dry in many places: and here the enormous waves of the vast southern ocean meeting with so abrupt a resistance, break, with inconceivable violence, in a surf which no rocks or storms in the northern hemisphere can produce. The danger of navigating the unknown parts of this ocean was greatly increased to our adventurers, by their having a crazy ship, and being short of provisions and every other necessary; "yet," says captain Cook, "the distinction of a first discoverer, made us cheerfully encounter every danger, aud submit to every inconvenience; and we chose rather to incur the censure of imprudence and temerity, which the idle and voluptuous so liberally bestow upon unsuccessful fortitude and perseverance, than leave a country which we had discovered unexplored, and give colour to a charge of timidity and irresolution."

Whilst the Endeavour lay in this harbour, Mr. Cook observed two immersions of Jupiter's first satellite: the one on the 29th of June, the other on the 16th of July: the observations did not differ quite ten minutes, and the mean between them made the longitude to be 145° 12′ east; latitude 15° 26′ south. On the 25th of June, the necessary repairs to the ship's keel being completed, an attempt was made to float her, but it proved unsuccessful, so that they were obliged to wait for the next spring tide. On the third of July another attempt was made, which succeeded; but she was found to have sprung a plank between decks, abreast of the main chains; so that it became necessary to lay her ashore again. The ship being again repaired, was once more afloat; but the difficulty and danger in sailing out were highly alarming, the harbour being clogged up with low rocks and dangerous shoals. On the 4th of August the ship was under sail, but was soon after brought to an anchor, the commander not thinking it safe to run in among the shoals, till he had well viewed them at low water from the mast-head, which might determine him which way to steer. They had then proceeded about five leagues from the harbour in which the ship had lain. The commander called the northernmost point of the main, then in sight, Cape Bedford, which lies in 15° 16′ S. latitude, 145° 15′ E. longitude. The next day the ship proceeded only eight miles. Mr. Cook, having minutely examined the appearance of the sea from the mast-head, was convinced that there was no other passage than through the labyrinth formed by those shoals, which reduced him to the utmost perplexity to determine what course to steer. On the 10th the

anchor was weighed, and the ship stood in for the land, the commander having at length determined to seek a passage along the shore to the northward. Three islands were seen in this course, the largest of which Mr. Cook visited, and ascended the highest hill upon it, from whence he had the mortification to perceive a reef of rocks stretching between two and three leagues without the islands, and seeming to extend farther than the eye could reach; but as the sea broke with a dreadful surf upon the outermost, a hope was entertained that no shoals were beyond that. This island is about eight leagues in circumference, and is visible at twelve leagues distance. It is rocky and barren, and, notwithstanding its distance from the main, appeared to be occasionally visited by the natives; for some frames of their huts were seen, built on eminences, and entirely exposed to the south-east winds, in a direction contrary to those that had been seen on the main; for they were constantly built either on the side of a hill, or under some bushes which afforded shelter from the wind: from which huts, and their situation, it was concluded, that at some seasons of the year the weather on this spot is invariably calm and fine; for the inhabitants have no boats that they can navigate on the sea to so great a distance, in such weather as was experienced from the time that the Endeavour first came upon the coast. As no animal was seen on this place but lizards, Mr. Cook named it Lizard Island.

The dangers which every where presented themselves in farther coasting along this country, made it necessary to quit the shore altogether, as every thing depended on securing a passage to the East-Indies; for only three months provisions, at short

allowance, were now on board. On the 13th of August the ship got under sail, and when she was arrived without the breakers, no ground could be found with 150 fathom of line: a large sea rolled in from the south-east; a certain sign that neither land nor shoals were near in that direction.

Whether this country did or did not join to New Guinea, was a point which Mr. Cook resolved to settle; and to do this, he returned to the coast of New Holland, braving such dangers as would have appalled the resolution of any man whose spirit for discovery had not absorbed all regard to personal safety. On the 25th of August the ship had as narrow an escape as she yet had experienced during the voyage; for she sailed within half a cable's length of a shoal, which lay scarcely two fathoms under the surface of the sea. On the 28th the Endeavour quitted that part of the coast of New Holland which had before been named Carpentaria. Our navigator found the two countries to be divided by a narrower sea, which he called Endeavour Straits.

Cape York is the most northern promontory of the country, 142° E. longitude, 10° 37′ S. latitude. On a small island Mr. Cook took possession of the whole eastern coast, from the latitude of 38° to 10½° south, in right of king George III. by the name of New South Wales, on which account the island received the name of Possession Island: here, as every where in this country, the few inhabitants seen, both men and women, were stark naked. Endeavour Straits, before-mentioned, are ten leagues broad. The south-eastern entrance of this passage is formed by New Holland, and the north-east by a congeries of islands, which have been called The

Prince of Wales's Islands, and which probably extend quite to New Guinea. M. de Bougainville, who came just at the entrance of these straits, to the most south-eastern parts of New Guinea, called that sea The Gulf of the Louisiade; the straits navigated by Mr. Cook, in the year 1770, not being then known to exist.

Mr. Cook continued his course to the northward, along the coast of New Guinea, until the 3d of September, in which navigation many attempts were made to get near enough to go on shore, and on that day it was effected: but the natives showed such a hostile disposition, that the party, to prevent the destruction of these people, returned to their boat, as they had no intention forcibly to invade the country, either to gratify their appetites or curiosity. Whilst the ship was off this coast, the land breezes, early in the morning, wafted from the shore a strong fragrance of the trees, shrubs and herbage, that covered the country. The spot from whence the Endeavour quitted the coast of New Guinea, lies in latitude 6° 15′ S. As the two countries of New Guinea and New Holland lie very near each other, and the intermediate space is full of islands, it is reasonable to suppose that they were both peopled from one common stock; yet no intercourse appears to have been kept up between them, as the cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, plantains, and other fruits of the former, all of which are so essentially serviceable for the support of life, are not transplanted to the latter, where no traces of them are found.

On the 16th of September, about ten o'clock at night, a phenomenon was observed in the heavens, which in many particulars resembled the Aurora

Borealis, and in others was very different. It consisted of a dull reddish light, and reached about twenty degrees above the horizon; its extent was very different at different times, but it was never less than eight or ten points of the compass. Through and out of this passed rays of light, of a brighter colour, which vanished and were renewed nearly in the same manner as those of the Aurora Borealis, but had no degree of the tremulous or vibratory motion which is observed in that meteor. The body of it bore S. S. E. from the ship, and continued without any diminution of its brightness till twelve o'clock, when the gentlemen retired to sleep, so that its farther duration was not known. The next day a small island appeared, which proved to be Savu: here a Dutch agent resides, and the natives, by artful management, are made subservient to the views of a settlement, which that republic has made on the island of Timor. Mr. Cook procured some refreshments here, and then proceeded to Batavia; quitting the common navigation, to the northward of Java, for the southward of that island, through the Straits of Sunda, which he considers as the safest passage. Here they anchored on the 9th of October.

The people who had seen Aotourou, the Indian whom M. de Bougainville had brought there, inquired whether Tupia was not the same person. On the 5th of November the ship was laid down, to have her bottom thoroughly repaired, and the same day, Mr. Monkhouse, the surgeon, fell the first sacrifice to the putrid air of the country. Tupia's health, on his arrival here, was in a very declining state, having a bilious disorder, for which he obstinately refused to take any medicines. Before he

landed he was quite lifeless, and extremely dejected; but he no sooner entered the town than he seemed to be animated with a new soul. The houses, carriages, streets, people, and multiplicity of other objects, all new, which rushed upon him at once, produced an effect like the sudden and secret power that is imagined of fascination. The Otaheitean boy, his attendant, expressed his wonder and delight in the most extravagant manner; he danced along the street in a kind of ecstacy, examining every object with a restless and eager curiosity. One of the first things which Tupia remarked was, the various dresses of the passing multitude, concerning which he made many inquiries; and when he was told, that in this place, where people of many different nations were assembled, every one wore the habit of his own country, he desired that he might conform to the custom, and appear in that of Otaheite. He had not been above a week on shore, before the baneful influence of the climate had operated powerfully on his shattered constitution. After the flow of spirits which the novelties of the place produced, upon his first landing, had subsided, he sunk on a sudden, and grew every day worse and worse: Tayeto too was seized with an inflammation on his lungs. A tent was pitched for him on the least baneful spot of this pestiferous island, where both the sea and land breezes blew directly upon him, and he expressed great satisfaction in his situation. Mr. Banks, although in a very broken state of health, attended on him with the utmost solicitude. In about ten days afterwards the poor Indian boy Tayeto died; and Tupia sunk at once with the loss of him, and survived him only a day or two, for he loved him with the tenderness of a parent. They

had both made great progress in the English language, in which they were greatly assisted by Mr. Green, the astronomer. When Tayeto was seized with the fatal disorder, as if certain of his approaching dissolution, he frequently said to those about him, tyau mate oee, "my friends, I am dying." He took any medicines that were offered him; but Tupia gave himself up to grief, regretting with extreme bitterness of heart, that he had left his own country. When he heard of Tayeto's death, he was quite inconsolable, frequently crying out, Tayeto, Tayeto! They were both buried in the island of Eadam. Such was the much to be regretted end of this intelligent and friendly Indian.

By the end of November the number of sick on board amounted to forty; and the rest of the ship's company were in a very feeble condition. Every individual had been sick, except the sail-maker, an old man between seventy and eighty years of age; and it is remarkable, that he was constantly drunk every day during his stay at this place. The life of Mr. Banks was despaired of for some time.

On the 26th of December the ship sailed out, arrived at the Cape of Good Hope on the 7th of March, 1771, and continued there until the 13th of April. In the course of about six weeks, in passing from Batavia to the Cape, the mortality on board the ship was very great; almost every night a dead body was committed to the sea. Among those who died were Mr. Spering, a gentleman who was in Mr. Banks's retinue; Mr. Parkinson, his natural-history painter; Mr. Green, the astronomer; the boatswain; the carpenter and his mate; Mr. Monkhouse, the midshipman, who had fothered the ship after she had been stranded on the coast of

New Holland; the old jolly sail-maker, and his assistant; the ship's cook; the corporal of marines; two of the carpenter's crew; another midshipman, and nine seamen; in all twenty-three persons, besides seven who had been buried at Batavia. On the 1st of May Mr. Cook arrived at St. Helena, and continued there three days. On the 23d, the first lieutenant, Mr. Hicks, died of a consumption, of which he was not free when the ship left England. Mr. Cook gave Mr. Charles Clerke, a young man, of whom we shall have much to say hereafter, an order to act as lieutenant in his room, passing over Mr. Gore, the second lieutenant.

The rigging and sails were now become so bad, that something was giving way every day; they continued their course, however, without any unfavourable occurrence, until the 10th of June, when the Lizard was seen; and on the 12th the ship came to an anchor in the Downs.

Never did the abilities and undaunted fortitude of a navigator appear so conspicuously as in this long, dangerous, and successful voyage; from which every possible advantage was derived to science, by the unwearied researches of the gentlemen who had embarked for the purpose of taking the most extensive survey of nature. The discoveries made in this voyage have awakened the curiosity of mankind, and excited a general disposition to become acquainted with every part of the globe, and with the whole system of nature. Nor ought the advantages which have been derived from thence to navigation, to be passed over in silence. Mr. Green, whom death deprived of the reward which awaited his labours, whilst traversing the great Pacific Ocean, was indefatigable both in making observa-

tions and calculating upon them; and by his instructions and assistance, many of the petty officers were enabled both to observe and calculate with great exactness. This method of finding the longitude at sea may be put into universal practice, and may always be depended upon within half a degree, which is sufficient for all nautical purposes. If therefore observing and calculating were considered as necessary qualifications for every sea officer, the labours of the speculative theorist to solve this problem, might be remitted without much injury to mankind.

SECOND VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD,

BY CAPTAIN JAMES COOK,

IN THE RESOLUTION, ACCOMPANIED BY THE ADVENTURE, CAPTAIN FURNEAUX,

TO DISCOVER A SOUTHERN CONTINENT.

CHAP. I.

Object of the voyage. Occurrences in the first attempt, from their departure from the Cape of Good Hope until the arrival of captain Cook at New Zealand.

THE uncommon abilities which captain Cook had displayed in conducting his important voyage of discovery, caused him to be soon appointed to undertake another voyage, under the same royal auspice which had given birth to the former expedition, the chief design of which was, to determine with precision whether a southern continent did exist. Captain Cook had already exploded the theoretic opinion, that New Zealand was a part of that continent: he had done more; by proceeding further to the southward, he ascertained, that no land of any considerable extent existed in that direction, from the great swell of the sea; for, when a vast expanse of water has neither land nor ice to check its activity, and poise its motions, the undulation of the waves is peculiarly strong. The design therefore of this voyage was, to determine how far it

was possible to penetrate towards the South Pole, by attempting it in different directions. For this purpose two vessels, the Resolution and Adventure, were fitted out as king's ships: the conducting of the expedition was committed to captain James Cook, who had the former for his ship; captain Furneaux, who had already sailed round the world with captain Wallis, as his first lieutenant, had the command of the latter. The objects of this expedition being of the highest importance to geography and science in general, every possible attention was paid to the equipment of the ships; and gentlemen of distinguished abilities, in different arts and sciences, were engaged to embark on the voyage. These were Mr. William Hodges, a landscape painter, whose department it was to make drawings and paintings of such places in the countries they should touch at, as might serve to give a more perfect idea thereof than could be formed from written descriptions only: Dr. John Reinhold Forster, and his son, Mr. George Forster, were appointed to collect such subjects of natural history as should occur on the voyage: the Board of Longitude agreed with Mr. William Wales, and Mr. William Bayley, to make the astronomical observations; the former on board the Resolution, the latter on board the Adventure. Besides these, Dr. Sparrman, a gentleman who had studied under Linnæus, embarked at the Cape, to co-operate with the Messrs. Forsters in their researches into nature.

Nothing can be conceived more dreary and appalling than such a navigation. The reader, therefore, instead of being entertained with the placid scenes and simple manners discernible in the untutored part of his species, will now have his atten-

tion raised, and his astonishment excited, whilst he follows these bold mortals through watery regions, which no keel had ever cut before. To see such an undertaking pushed with such a persevering spirit, gives us an idea of men in whose breasts all sense of danger was extinguished; whilst their escape from those dangers which continually beset them, and threatened every moment to overwhelm them, after acknowledging the protection of Providence, is the strongest proof that can be given of consummate nautical skill.

The two ships sailed from Plymouth Sound the 13th of July, 1772, and anchored in Table-bay, at the Cape of Good Hope, on the 30th of October following. On the 22d of November they again set sail: captain Cook directed his course due south, and on the 10th of December following, being in 50° 40′ S. lat. saw the first ice. The mass was fifty feet high, and half a mile in circuit; flat at top, and its sides rose in a perpendicular direction, against which the sea broke exceedingly high. In the afternoon of the same day, they sailed near another large cubical mass, which was about 2000 feet long, 400 feet broad, and at least as high again as the main-top-gallant-mast head, or 200 feet. According to the experiments of Boyle and Mairan, the volume of ice is to that of sea-water nearly as 10 to 9; consequently, by the known rules of hydrostatics, the volume of ice which rises above the surface of the water, is to that which sinks below it as 1 to 9. Supposing therefore this piece to be entirely of a regular figure, its depth under water must have been 1800 feet, and its whole height 2000 feet: allowing its length, as above mentioned, 2000 feet, and its breadth 400 feet, the whole mass must have

contained 1600 millions cubic feet of ice. On the 12th, six more were seen, some of them near two miles in circuit, and 60 feet high; and yet such was the force and height of the waves, that the sea broke quite over them. This exhibited for a few moments a view very pleasing to the eye, but a sense of the danger soon filled the mind with horror; for had the ship got against the weather side of one of these islands, when the sea ran high, she would have been dashed to pieces in a moment. On the 14th, their route to the southward was stopped by an immense field of low ice, 54° 50′ S. 21° 34′ E. No end could be seen to this ice, either to the east, west, or south. In different parts of this field were islands, or hills of ice, like those that had before been found floating in the sea; several on board thought they saw land over the ice, but they were only fog banks, which bore that appearance. A boat was hoisted out, to try the direction of the current: Mr. Wales the astronomer, and the elder Mr. Forster, took the opportunity of going in her, to make experiments of the temperature of the sea, at a certain depth. It was very foggy when they left the ship; soon after the fog increased so much, that those in the boat had entirely lost sight of both ships; and no situation can be imagined more dreary and horrible than theirs: in a four-oared boat, in an immense ocean, far from any inhabitable shore, surrounded with ice, and destitute of provisions. They rowed about for some time, making vain efforts to be heard; but all was silence about them, and they could not see the length of their boat. They were the more unfortunate, as they had neither mast nor sail, and only two oars. In this dreadful suspense they determined to lie still, hoping that, provided they pre-

served their place, the sloops would not drive away, as it was calm. At length they heard the jingling of a bell at a distance, which sound was heavenly music to their ears; they immediately rowed towards it, and by continually hailing, were at last answered by the Adventure. They hurried on board, overjoyed to have escaped the danger of perishing by slow degrees, through the inclemencies of weather and famine.

The ships then changed their course to the eastward; large islands of ice were hourly seen in all directions round the sloops, so that they were become as familiar to those on board as the clouds and the sea. Whenever a strong reflection of white was seen on the skirts of the sky near the horizon, then ice was sure to be met with: notwithstanding which, the ice itself is not entirely white, but often tinged, especially near the surface of the sea, with a most beautiful sapphirine, or rather berylline blue, evidently reflected from the water. This blue colour sometimes appeared twenty or thirty feet above the surface, and was probably produced by some particles of sea-water, which had been dashed against the mass in tempestuous weather, and had penetrated into its interstices. In great islands of ice were frequently observed shades or casts of white, lying above each other in strata, sometimes of six inches, and at other times of a foot high. This appearance seems to confirm the opinion concerning the increase and accumulation of such huge masses, by heavy falls of snow at different intervals: for snow being of various kinds, small-grained, large-grained, in light feathery locks, &c. the various degrees of its compactness account for the different colours of the strata. The 25th, being Christmas-day, was spent

with the usual chearfulness among the officers and passengers; but among the sailors, notwithstanding the surrounding rocks of ice, it was passed in noise and drunkenness, to which, according to Mr. Forster, they seem to have particularly devoted that day. The next morning the ships sailed through a great quantity of packed or broken ice, some of which looked dirty or decaying. Islands of ice still surrounded them, and in the evening the sun setting just behind one of them, tinged its edges with gold, and brought upon the whole mass a beautiful suffusion of purple. Although this was the middle of summer here, the day was colder, in the opinion of our navigator, than in any part of England. During their whole summer continuance in the frigid zone, they had no thaw, for the mercury in Fahrenheit's thermometer kept generally below the freezing point. The chace of penguins proved very unsuccessful, though it afforded great sport. These birds dived so frequently, continued so long under water, and at times skipped continually into and out of it, making away with such amazing velocity in a straight line, that the fowlers were obliged to give over the pursuit, but not before they had come near enough to one of them to wound it; but though they followed it closely, and fired above ten times with small shot, which was observed to hit, yet they were at last obliged to kill it with ball. When they took it up, they perceived its hard glossy plumage had constantly turned the shot aside: this plumage is extremely thick, and consists of long narrow feathers, which lie above each other as closely as scales, and secure these amphibious birds against the wet, in which they almost constantly live. Their very thick skin, and their

fat, seem wisely appropriated to them by nature, to resist the perpetual winter of these inhospitable climates. Their broad belly, the situation of their feet far behind, and their fins which supply the place of wings, are constructed with equal wisdom to facilitate the progress of their otherwise lumpish bodies through the water. That which was shot weighed eleven pounds and a half. The blue petrells, which every where abound in this immense ocean, now settled in flocks of several hundreds on the smooth surface of the water: these were not worse fitted out against the cold than the penguins. Their plumage was amazingly abundant, and increased their bulk in a great proportion; and two feathers instead of one proceeded out of every root, lying within each other, which formed a very warm covering. As they are almost continually in the air, their wings are very strong, and of great length, to support them.

On the 2d of January, 1773, captain Cook searched for Cape Circumcision, which is laid down by Bouvet in 58° 53′ S. latitude, 10° 6′ E. longitude; but as he saw no appearance of land, though the weather was very clear, he supposes it to have been nothing but mountains of ice surrounded by loose or field ice. Three boats were hoisted out on the 9th of January, and in about five or six hours took as much ice as yielded fifteen tons of good fresh water. The salt water which adhered to the ice was so trifling as not to be tasted, and after it had lain on deck a short time, entirely drained off; and the water which the ice yielded was perfectly sweet and well tasted. Part of this ice was broken in pieces, and put into casks; another part was melted in the copper, and filled up the casks with the water;

and some was kept on deck for present use. This water had a purer taste than any which was on board; the only fault it possessed, according to Mr. Forster, was, that the fixed air was expelled from it, by which means almost every one who used it was afflicted with swellings in the glands of the throat. On the 16th of January they crossed the antarctic circle, in 39° 35′ E. longitude; which, from the creation of the world to that time, had never been passed by human beings. The next day thirty-eight ice islands, great and small, were seen, beside loose ice in abundance. After having reached 67 deg. 35 min. S. captain Cook ordered the ships to put about, and stood N. E. by N.; an immense field of solid ice extending to the southward, as far as the eye could reach from the mast-head, which rendered it impossible to advance farther that way. Here were seen many whales playing about the ice, and for two days before, several flocks of brown and white pintatoes were seen, which they named antarctic peterels, because they seemed to be natives of that region. On the 30th of January they passed near two islands of ice, one of which appeared to be breaking or falling to pieces, by the crackling noise it made, which was equal to the report of a four pounder. This was the last ice seen till they returned again to the southward. The Resolution lost sight of the Adventure on the 8th of February, in 50 deg. of S. latitude, 63 deg. W. longitude, and the two sloops continued separated for the rest of the cruise.

A beautiful phenomenon appeared in the heavens on the 17th of February: it consisted of long columns of a clear white light, shooting up from the horizon to the eastward, almost to the zenith, and

spreading gradually over the whole southern part of the sky. These columns were sometimes bent sideways at their upper extremity, and though in most respects similar to the northern lights, aurora borealis, of our hemisphere, yet different from them in being always of a whitish colour, whereas ours assume various tints, especially those of a fiery and a purple hue. The stars were sometimes hid by, and sometimes faintly to be seen through, the substance of these southern lights, aurora australis, which till then had escaped the notice of voyagers. The sky was generally clear when they appeared, and the air sharp and cold, the thermometer standing at the freezing point, the ship being then in 58 deg. S. On the 24th of February, being in 62 deg. S. they fell in once more with a solid field of ice, which obstructed their further progress in that direction. The Resolution, on the 5th of March, being in 59 deg. 58 min. S. lat. 118 deg. 39 min. E. three islands of ice were in sight, all of them large, especially one, which was larger than any that had been before seen. The side opposite to the ship seemed to be a mile in extent, and the whole mass was supposed to be three in circuit. In passing it in the night, a continual crackling was heard, occasioned, no doubt, by pieces breaking from it; for in the morning the sea, for some distance round it, was covered with large and small pieces, and the island itself did not appear so large as it had done the evening before. It was supposed to be one hundred feet high, yet such was the impetuous force and height of the waves which broke against it, by meeting with such a sudden resistance, that they rose considerably higher. The Resolution made the coast of New Zealand on the 26th of March,

and anchored in Dusky-bay, on the south-west coast of Tavai Poenammoo, after having been one hundred and seventeen days at sea, in which time they had sailed three thousand six hundred and sixty leagues, without having had sight of any land.

Captain Cook left Dusky-bay the 11th of May, 1773, and casting anchor in Queen Charlotte's Sound, on the 17th of the same month, had there the happiness to meet with his consort, the Adventure. When all hope of rejoining his commander was lost, Mr. Furneaux had proceeded, in nearly the same parallel of latitude, through 60 deg. of longitude: then shaping his course to the north-eastward, he reached the southern point of Van Diemen's land. He afterwards explored the eastern coast, until he had passed the fortieth degree of latitude; but contrary winds and tempests prevented his proceeding as far northward as Point Hicks, where captain Cook had touched in his former voyage. He then proceeded to Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand, the place which had been appointed for rendezvous in case of separation, where he was joined by his commander.

They sailed together for Otaheite, in June, 1773, in which course they came within sight of Pitcairn's Island, discovered by captain Carteret, which Mr. Forster supposes to be the same spot as had been before seen by a French navigator, and called by him l'Encarnation. From Otaheite the two ships sailed to the Society islands, which had been discovered by captain Cook in his former voyage, touching for refreshments at Huaheine, in September, 1773. Whilst they lay here, many young men of the island voluntarily offered to embark with captain Cook; he singled out one, who was between

seventeen and eighteen years of age, named Heete-heete. This youth was a native of Bolabola, and a near relation of Opoony, the king of that island, and the conqueror of several adjacent ones; he is described as handsome in his person, with a sweetness and gentleness of manners, which endeared him to every one on board the ship. At the same time captain Furneaux took another youth on board the Adventure, named Omai, or as he is improperly called, Omiah. This youth was a native of Ulietea, and his father possessed some land there, of which, however, he had been dispossessed by the men of Bolabola, from whom escaping with life, he and his family had come to reside at Huaheine. He was not of the rank of earees or gentry, but belonged to the middle class of people. He excelled neither in figure, shape, nor complexion; his colour was of a deep hue, resembling a towtow, or one of the common people; and both Mr. Forster and captain Cook agree in thinking him no proper sample of the inhabitants of those islands in respect to personal beauty; however, they are both of opinion, that the qualities of his heart and head resembled those of his countrymen in general, and that no one of the natives would have given more general satisfaction by his behaviour in England. He possessed quick parts, a good understanding, and honest principles, but too volatile and trifling to make life a serious business; not an extraordinary genius, like Tupia, but not at all deficient in intelligence, as may be inferred from his knowledge of the game of chess, in which he made an amazing proficiency.

Captain Cook on leaving Huaheine sailed in quest of a cluster of islands, which had been seen by Tasman in January, 1642-3. He arrived at one of the

most south-eastwardly of the group, which is called by the natives Ea-Ou-Whe, and received from Tasman the name of Middleburg. To the congeries of islands formed here, which consist of more than twenty in number, and extend through about three degrees of latitude, and two of longitude, captain Cook gave the general name of the Friendly Islands, on account of the firm alliance and friendship, which seemed to subsist among the inhabitants, and from their courteous behaviour to strangers. On quitting this country, our navigator sailed to New Zealand, and in coming round the coast, near to Cook's Straits, in November 1773, the two ships again separated; captain Furneaux arrived a second time in Queen Charlotte's Sound, some little while after the Resolution had left it. While he lay here, the cutter, in which were two midshipmen and eight seamen, was sent up a creek to procure wood and water; not returning the commander became anxious for their safety. The next day an officer was sent in another boat in search of them. The first intimations which they received of the fate of their comrades, was the sight of the rullock-parts of the cutter, and some shoes, one of which was known to have belonged to a midshipman who was of the party; presently a piece of meat was found, which was at first supposed to be some of the salted meat belonging to the cutter's crew, but on a closer examination it proved to be fresh. Several baskets were found on the beach tied up, which they eagerly cut open, and found them to contain roasted flesh and fern-roots, which served the natives for bread: on further search many shoes were found, and a hand, which was immediately known to belong to a fore-castle-man, it being marked with the initial

letters of his name by an Otaheitean tattowing instrument. Proceeding onward to the next bay, a great many people appeared on the beach, and three or four canoes; on the approach of the boat they retreated to a small island: on the beach were two bundles of celery, which had been gathered for loading the cutter; a broken oar was stuck upright in the ground, to which the natives had tied their canoes. They searched in vain on every part of the beach for the cutter, but a shocking spectacle suddenly opened upon them. Here were scattered the heads, hearts and lungs of several of the unhappy men, who had been murdered by the natives, and dogs were seen devouring their entrails. Horror chilled the sailors' blood at the sight, which urged them to a fierce desire of revenge. They fired and killed several of the savages, and destroyed all the canoes that lay on the beach.

When captain Cook visited this country, on his third voyage, in February, 1777, Pedroe or Matahouah, an old friend of captain Cook's in his former voyage, informed Omai of the circumstances attending this unhappy affair; he said, that while the party from the ship were sitting at dinner, surrounded by several of the natives, some of the latter stole or snatched from them some bread and fish, for which they were beaten. This being resented, a quarrel ensued, and two New Zealanders were shot dead by the only muskets that were fired; for, before the party had time to discharge a third, or to load again those that had been fired, the natives rushed in upon them, overpowered them with their numbers, and put them all to death. A black servant of captain Furneaux's, who was left in the boat to take care of her, was afterwards said to be

the cause of the quarrel; for a native stealing something out of the boat, the negro gave him a severe blow with a stick. The cries of the fellow being heard by his countrymen at a distance, they imagined he was killed, and immediately began the attack on the party ashore, who fell a sacrifice to the fury of their savage assailants. These different accounts were supported by different kinds of authority. Captain Cook thinks both of them to be true, as they perfectly coincide; the quarrel appears to have happened while the boat's crew were sitting at their meal, and while some of the natives were stealing from the man who had been left in the boat, others of them might take the same liberty with the property of those who were on shore. However, the catastrophe appears not to have arisen from any deliberate plan of slaughter concerted by the natives, but from unpremeditated resentment and sudden fury.

Captain Furneaux being thus deprived of so considerable a number of his people, and seeing no probability of forming a junction with the Resolution, after having refreshed his crew, determined to return home by the most direct course, and safely arrived at Spithead in July, 1774.

The two separations which happened to the ships in this voyage, at times when the commander of the expedition was engaged, or engaging in the most severe and perilous object of his voyage, cannot but excite an apprehension, that his coadjutor had no great propensity to approximate towards the pole, especially when it is considered, that the two ships, which made the succeeding voyage, though employed on the service during four years, never lost each other. Indeed, when the nature of the enter-

prise is considered, the wonder is, that a man could be found to accomplish such a navigation as that to the southward, not that he wanted a second in the enterprise. Captain Cook himself, who dared to do all that man dare do, would not, perhaps, have conducted an attendant ship in such a course. It is the commander in chief who reaps that universal and never-dying fame, which can alone stimulate to an attempt so far beyond ordinary humanity.

CHAP. II.

The second attempt made by captain Cook, in the Resolution, to penetrate towards the South Pole. From his sailing from New Zealand, in November 1773, to his arrival at Cape Deseada, in December 1774.

OUR indefatigable navigator had made the best use of the four winter months, by cruising in the middle latitudes of the South Sea, in which time he examined a space of more than 40 degrees of longitude between the tropics. The savage rocks of New Zealand then only afforded a short shelter, while he changed his fair weather rigging for such as might resist the storms and rigours of more inhospitable climates.

Captain Cook having now lost his consort, the Adventure, entered on his second southern course alone, on the 27th of November, of which he speaks in the following terms: "It being the unanimous opinion of every one, that the Adventure could neither be stranded on the coast, nor be in any of the harbours, I therefore gave up looking for her, and all thoughts of seeing her any more during the voyage, as no rendezvous was absolutely fixed upon after leaving New Zealand. Nevertheless, that did

not discourage me from fully exploring the southern parts of the Pacific Ocean, in the doing of which I intended to employ the whole of the ensuing season. On our quitting the coast, and consequently all hopes of being joined by our consort, I had the satisfaction to find that not a man was dejected, or thought the dangers we had yet to go through were in the least increased by being alone; but as cheerfully proceeded to the south, or wherever I might think proper to lead them, as if the Adventure, or even more ships, had been in our company." But while the seamen viewed their destination with a cheerful acquiescence, the philosophers seemed to consider it enveloped in all its gloom, as appears from Mr. Forster's relation: "The officers and passengers," says he, "entered on this second cruise under several difficulties, which did not exist before: they had not now any live stock to be compared to that which they took from the Cape of Good Hope; and the little stock of provisions which had supplied their table with variety, in preference to that of the common sailor, was now so far consumed, that they were become nearly upon a level; especially as the seamen were inured to that way of life, by constant habit, almost from their infancy, and the others had never experienced it before. The hope of meeting with new lands was vanished; the topics of common conversation were exhausted; the cruise to the south could not present any thing new, but appeared in all its chilling horrors before us; and the absence of our consort doubled every danger. We had enjoyed a few agreeable days between the tropics; we had feasted as well as the produce of the several islands would permit; and we had been entertained with the novelty of various

objects among different nations; but, according to the common vicissitudes of fortune, these agreeable moments were to be succeeded by a long period of fogs and frosty weather; of fasting, and of tedious uniformity."

December 6, 1773, these adventurers were in latitude 51° 33′ south, and longitude 180°; consequently just at the point of the Antipodes of London, being the first Europeans, and most probably the first human beings who had reached that point, and they are likely to be the last. A notion prevails, that sir Francis Drake visited the Antipodes of London, which the legend expresses, by having passed under the middle arch of London-bridge; but nothing can be more gross than this mistake, as his track lay in the high northern latitudes. Indeed he did pass the periæci, or the point of 180° longitude, on the same parallel with London, near the peninsula of Kamptschatka. December 12. The first ice was seen in 62° 10′ south, 172° west, which is 11¼° more to the southward than the first ice seen the preceding year in the Atlantic Ocean. Captain Cook concludes there can be no land to the southward, under the meridian of New Zealand, but what must lie very far to the south, from the great swell which came from the south-west, when a strong gale blew from the north-west. December 15. In 66 degrees south, 159 degrees west, the farther course to the southward was interrupted on account of the ice, among which they were in a manner embayed, which obliged them to tack to the northward, and soon after they got clear of all the loose ice, but not without receiving several hard knocks from the larger pieces. The weather remained foggy, and several ice-islands still lay in their way, one of which they

were near falling aboard of; and if that had happened, none would have survived to have related the circumstance. The ship passed within her own length to windward of this huge mass, so that every one on board was in the most dreadful suspense for a few minutes. Several penguins were seen on some little ice-islands, and a few antarctic peterels on the wing. The next day the weather clearing up, they stretched to the south-east; it was soon succeeded by thick hazy weather, with snow-showers, and all the rigging became coated with ice. December 20. They crossed the antarctic circle a second time, in the longitude of 147° 46′ west. The next morning ice-islands were seen very high and rugged, forming at their tops many peaks, whereas those that had been seen before were flat, and not so high; and many of these were between two and three hundred feet in height, and between two and three hundred miles in circuit, with perpendicular cliffs or sides, astonishing to behold. Most of their winged companions had now left them, the grey albatrosses only excepted; and, instead of the other birds, they were visited by a few antarctic peterels, two of which were shot. These birds are of the size of a large pigeon; the feathers of the head, back, and part of the upper side of the wings, are of a light brown; the belly and side of the wings white; the tail-feathers are also white, but tipped with brown. A smaller peterel was afterwards shot, entirely of a grey plumage: these birds were fuller of feathers than any hitherto seen. A few chocolate-coloured albatrosses were seen in these parts, all which birds kept among the ice; "From whence," says captain Cook, "we may with reason conjecture that there is land to the south." December 22. They

had penetrated to 67° 31′, being the highest southern latitude they had reached; longitude 142° 54′ west. Twenty-three small ice-islands were seen this day from the deck, and twice that number from the mast-head; and yet the weather was so foggy, that they could not see above two or three miles round them. On the 25th, the weather being clear and fair, upwards of ninety large islands were in sight. This being Christmas-day, the captain invited the officers and mates to dinner; and one of the lieutenants entertained the petty officers. The sailors feasted on a double portion of pudding, regaling themselves with the brandy of their allowance, which they had saved for this occasion some months before, having a premeditated solicitude to get drunk on that day. The sight of an immense number of ice-islands, among which the ship drifted at the mercy of the current, every moment in danger of being dashed in pieces against them, could not deter the sailors from indulging in their favourite amusement: as long as they had brandy left, they would persist to keep Christmas, though the elements had conspired together for their destruction. Their long acquaintance with a sea-faring life, had inured them to all kind of perils; and their heavy labour, with the inclemencies of weather and other hardships, making their muscles rigid, and their nerves obtuse, had communicated insensibility to their minds. At noon, by an observation of the sun's altitude, they found that they had just returned out of the antarctic polar circle. During their stay in the frigid zone, they had scarcely any night; so that, within a few minutes of midnight, the light of the sun was sufficient to write or read by. The sun's stay below the horizon was so very short at this time, that a clear

twilight continued all the time of his disappearing.

On the 3d of January, 1774, being in 56° south, 140° 31′ west, the wind being westwardly, obliged them to steer north-eastwardly; the captain was therefore under the necessity of leaving a space of sea unexplored to the west, containing near 40 degrees of longitude, and half that of latitude. This space was afterwards explored on the return of the Resolution the next year, and likewise by captain Furneaux, in the Adventure, much about this time. On the 20th of January, being in latitude 62° 34′ south, 116° 24′ west, they were becalmed, when two ice-islands appeared in sight, one of which seemed to be as large as any that had been seen; it was supposed to be full two hundred feet in height, and terminated in a peak, not unlike the cupola of St. Paul's church. On the 25th of January the wind increased very much, and in a short time blew a tempestuous gale. At nine o'clock at night, a huge mountainous wave struck the ship on the beam, and filled the deck with a deluge of water; it poured into the cabin and extinguished the lights, leaving the gentlemen who were sitting there, for a moment in doubt, whether they were not entirely overwhelmed, and sinking into the abyss. Indeed, the situation of those on board was at this time very dismal. The ocean about them wore a furious aspect, seeming, as it were, to be incensed at the presumption of a few intruding mortals. "A gloomy melancholy," says Mr. Forster, "loured on the brows of our ship-mates, and a dreary silence reigned among us. Salt meat, our constant diet, was become loathsome to us all, even to those that had been bred to a nautical life from their earliest years. The hour of dinner was hateful to us; for the well-known

smell of the victuals had no sooner reached us, than we found it impossible to partake of them with a hearty appetite." Thus were these southern cruisers beset with hardships peculiarly severe. The ice, the fog, the storms and ruffled surface of the sea, composed a soul-sinking scene, which was seldom cheered by the reviving beams of the sun. "In short," says Mr. Forster, "we rather vegetated than lived; we withered, and became indifferent to all that animates the soul at other times; we sacrificed our health, our feelings, our enjoyments, to the honour of pursuing a track unattempted before."

January 26. Passed for the third time within the antarctic polar circle, 109° 31′ west; and on the 29th, in the afternoon, were in 69° 45′ south, 108° 5′ west: passed a piece of weed covered with barnacles, which a brown albatross was picking off. The boats were hoisted out, and took up a large quantity of broken ice, which afforded a seasonable supply of fresh water. The mildest sunshine was enjoyed this day that had ever been experienced in the frigid zone. This led them to entertain hopes of penetrating as far towards the south pole as other navigators had done towards the north pole; but the next day, about four in the morning, they discovered a solid ice-field of immense extent before them, which bore from east to west. A bed of fragments floated all round this field, which seemed to be raised several feet high above the level of the water. Whilst in this situation, the southern part of the horizon was illuminated by the rays of light reflected from the ice, to a considerable height. Ninety-seven ice-islands were distinctly seen within the field, besides those on the outside; many of them very large, and looking like a ridge of moun-

tains, rising one above another, till they were lost in the clouds. The outer, or northern edge of this immense field, was composed of loose or broken ice, close packed together, so that it was not possible for any thing to enter it. Such mountains of ice as these, captain Cook believes, never were seen in the Greenland seas, so that no comparison can be drawn between the ice here and there; and it was the opinion of most on board, that this ice extended quite to the pole, to which they were then within less than nineteen degrees; or perhaps joined to some land, to which it had been from the earliest time; and that it is to the south of this parallel that all the ice is formed, which is found scattered up and down to the northward, and afterwards broken off by gales of wind, or other causes, and brought forward by the currents, which were always found to set in that direction in high latitudes. Some penguins were heard here, but none seen, and few other birds, or any thing that could lead to a supposition that there was any land near: however, captain Cook is of opinion, that there must be some land to the south behind this ice. "But if there is," says he, "it can afford no better retreat for birds, or any other animals, than the ice itself, with which it must be wholly covered. I, who was ambitious, not only of going further than any one had been before, but as far as it was possible for man to go, was not sorry at meeting with this interruption, as it in some measure relieved us, at least shortened the dangers and hardships inseparable from the navigation of the southern polar regions. Since therefore we could not proceed further to the south, no other reason need be assigned for my tacking, and standing back to the north, being at this time

in the latitude of 71° 10′ south, longitude 106° 54′ west; which was the nearest approximation to the pole during the whole voyage."

Captain Cook than sailed northward; in which track he went in search of land said to have been discovered by Juan Fernandez about a century before, in latitude 38 degrees south, and laid down by Mr. Dalrymple in 90 degrees west, but no such land was found; if it does exist, our navigator is of opinion that it can be only a small island. Mr. Forster says the matter was not fully searched into, owing to a dangerous bilious colic which seized the captain, and for some days greatly endangered his life; but the sedulous attention of Mr. Patten, the surgeon, proved successful to restore him to health. Without any occurrence worth relating, they fell in with Easter Island the 11th of March, 1774, having been out of sight of land one hundred and four days.

This spot is said to have been first visited by captain Davis, an Englishman, who called it Davis's Land; Roggewein, a Dutchman, touched here in 1722, and gave it the name of Easter Island. It is about four leagues over, from north-east to south-west, and its greatest width is about two leagues. The country is barren and rocky; the natives, who are not numerous, draw a wretched subsistence from the earth, and the fish which they catch on the coast. Mr. Forster is of opinion, that the island was at first produced by a volcano, and that it had been recently reduced to its present desolate state by an eruption. The most remarkable curiosity belonging to this spot is, a number of colossal statues, of which, however, very few remain entire; these statues are placed only on the sea coast: at the east

side of the island were seen the ruins of three platforms of stone-work, on each of which had stood four of these large statues; but they were all fallen down from two of them, and one from the third: they were broken or defaced by the fall; Mr. Wales measured one which had fallen; it was fifteen feet in length, and six broad over the shoulders. Each statue had on its head a large cylindric stone, of a red colour, wrought perfectly round: others were found that measured near twenty-seven feet, and upwards of eight feet across the shoulders; and a still larger one was seen standing, the shade of which was sufficient to shelter all the party, consisting of near thirty persons, from the rays of the sun. The workmanship, though rude, was not bad; nor were the features of the face ill-formed; the ears were long, according to the distortion fashionable in the country; and the bodies had hardly any thing of a human figure about them. How these islanders, wholly unacquainted with any mechanical power, could raise such stupendous figures, and afterwards place the large cylindric stones upon their heads, is truly wonderful: the most probable conjecture seems to be, that the stone is factitious; and that each figure was gradually erected, by forming a temporary platform round it, and raising it as the work advanced; but they are, at any rate, very strong proofs of the ingenuity and perseverance of the islanders, in the age when these figures were made; and indicate that the ancestors of the present race saw better days than their descendants now enjoy.

The Resolution then proceeded to the Marquesas of Mendana, which were first discovered in 1597, by a Spaniard; they are five islands, which occupy

one degree of latitude, and near half a degree of longitude; the most northern of the cluster was not seen by Mendana, and was first discovered by captain Cook, in April, 1774. He gave it the name of Hood Island; it lies in latitude 9° 26′ S. longitude 139° 13′ W. The other four islands are named La Magdalena, St. Pedro, La Dominica, and Santa Christina; the whole population of the group was calculated at 50,000 persons.

Captain Cook proceeded a second time to Otaheite; then to the Society Islands, where they parted with Heete-hete, or Mahine. Having refreshed his crew he sailed in search of land which had been seen by that great navigator Quiros, in 1606, and to which he gave the name of Tierra del Esperitu Santo. From the time when they were first seen, until captain Cook's voyage in the Endeavour, this island had been supposed to be part of the southern continent, called Terra Australis Incognita: our navigator, by sailing round New Zealand, and along the eastern coast of New Holland, was fully satisfied that this land was quite detached from either of those countries; he therefore now resolved to explore it accurately. M. de Bougainville had visited the northern parts in 1768, which he found to consist of many islands: these he called the Archipelago of the Great Cyclades. Captain Cook did much more than either of his predecessors; for besides ascertaining the extent and situation of these islands, he discovered several in the group which were before unknown; he explored the whole cluster, and thinking himself thereby entitled to affix to it a general appellation, he named these islands the New Hebrides. They are situated between the latitudes of 14° 29′ and 20° 4′ S. and

between 166° 41′ and 170° 21′ E. longitude; and extend one hundred and twenty-five leagues in the direction of N. N. W. and S. S. E. The New Hebrides consist of the following islands, some of which have received names from the different European navigators; others retain the names which they bear among the natives, viz. Tierra del Esperitu Santo, Mallicollo, St. Bartholomew, Isle of Lepers, Aurora, Whitsuntide, Ambrym, Immer, Apee, Three Hills, Sandwich, Montagu, Hinchinbrook, Shepherd, Eorramanga, Irronan, Annatom and Tanna. On the latter island a volcano was seen, about four miles to the west of the ship, burning with great fury. In the night of the 5th of August it vomited up vast quantities of fire and smoke, and the flames were seen to rise above the hills which lay between it and the ship. At every eruption, it made a loud rumbling noise, like that of thunder, or the blowing up of large mines. A heavy shower of rain, which fell at the same time, seemed to increase it; and the wind blowing from that quarter, the air was loaded with its ashes, which fell so thick that every thing was covered with the dust. It was a kind of fine sand or stone, ground or burnt to powder, and was exceedingly troublesome to the eyes. Mr. Forster, in his botanical excursions on this island, shot a pigeon, in the craw of which was a wild nutmeg; and on showing it to the natives, one of them produced three other nutmegs, which were wrapped in their mace; but they could not, or at least did not, point out the tree on which they grew.

The inhabitants of Mallicollo, which island lies nearly in the centre of the group, discovered very little curiosity, and held iron, edge-tools, nails and

Woman of the Island of Tanna.

Dublin Published by J. Christie 47 Rafs Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

beads, in no estimation: pieces of cloth and marble paper were most prized; but even they were not coveted with that avidity which is common to Indians. Captain Cook calls them, "an ape-like nation," and describes them as the most ugly, ill-proportioned people he ever saw; and in every respect differing from any he had met with in that sea. They are very dark-coloured, and rather a diminutive race, with long heads, flat faces, and monkey countenances. What adds greatly to their deformity is, a belt or cord, which they wear round their waist, and tie so tight over the belly, that the shape of their bodies is not unlike that of an overgrown pismire. The men go naked, except a piece of cloth or leaf used as a wrapper. The bridge of their nose is pierced, and in it they wear a piece of white stone, about an inch and a half long. They are peculiarly distinguished for the fairness of their dealings.

Captain Cook, having cleared the New Hebrides on the 1st of September, proceeded to the south-westward, and on the 4th fell in with a very large island, extending from 19° 37′ to 22° 30′ south, and from 163° 32′ to 167° 14′ east longitude. It is about eighty-seven leagues long, in the direction of north-west and south-east; but its breadth is not considerable, nor any where exceeds ten leagues. It is not more than 12 degrees distant from New Holland. As Captain Cook could not procure from the natives the name of the whole island, he assigned to it that of New Caledonia. It lies just within the tropic of Capricorn, and is the least kindly soil of any country known in that sea.

On the coast of New Caledonia a fish was caught, of a species entirely new; a small part of its liver

was eaten at supper by captain Cook and the two Forsters. In a few hours after they had retired to rest, they were awakened by very alarming symptoms, being all seized with an extreme giddiness; their hands and feet were so numbed that they could scarcely crawl; and a violent languor and oppression seized them. Emetics were administered with some success; but the remedy which procured them most relief was sudorifics. Some dogs, who ate the remainder of the liver, were violently affected; and a little pig, who had eaten the entrails, died soon after, having swelled to an unusual size.

Two small islands were seen at a few leagues distance, one of which was named the Island of Pines, the other Botany Island. Proceeding thence for New Zealand, an island was seen, about five leagues in circumference, which was uninhabited, and was supposed never to have had a human footstep printed upon it until that time. Small bits of porous reddish lava, which seemed to be decaying, were found here, and indicated that this spot had been a volcano. It lies in latitude 29° 2′ south, longitude 168° 16′ east. Here were found many trees and plants common to New Zealand, and in particular the flax plant. It received the name of Norfolk Island, and was discovered on the 10th of October, 1774.

Captain Cook once more entered Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand, on the 17th of the same month, and sailing from thence on the 10th of November, proceeded across the South Sea to the eastward, between the 53d and 55th degrees of latitude, without discovering any land, till he arrived at Cape Deseada, on the south-western extremity of Cape Horn, on the 17th of December following.

As no animal food had been procured at any of the places where the ship touched, after leaving the Society Islands, the want of fresh meat was very severely felt: according to Mr. Forster, every officer on board, who had made voyages round the world, and experienced the hardships incidental to them, agreed in declaring, that all their former sufferings were not to be compared to those they then felt, and that they had never before so thoroughly loathed a salt diet. Captain Cook had made a provision of dried hams for the voyage, which, by length of time, were much corrupted, all the fat being converted into a rancid kind of oil, and the salt having filled the flesh with a quantity of alkaline concretions like tartar: however, as often as this meat was carried to table, which happened once in a week, the petty officers devoured it with wistful looks, and spoke of the good fortune of those who partook of it so feelingly, as to render their situation truly pitiable to a sympathetic heart. It was owing to the excellent preservatives against the scurvy which were on board, and the great attention bestowed in expelling the foul air from all parts of the ship, that the depredations of disease were not added to the wretchedness occasioned by loathsome and putrid provisions. Thus circumstanced, Mr. Clerke, the first lieutenant, caught a fish exactly of the same species as that found on the coast of New Caledonia, which had poisoned Captain Cook and the Messrs. Forsters, and who were at that time enduring the effects of that deleterious supper: notwithstanding which, so strong was the desire to taste fresh food, that the officer ordered it to be cleaned and boiled; and the united persuasions of all on board could scarcely divert

him from his purpose, had he persisted in his resolution, and made a meal of the fish, it is most probable that it would have cost him his life; for a dog who ate of the entrails, lay several days in such exquisite torments, that he was at last thrown overboard to put an end to his misery. A few days after, a porpoise was struck with a harpoon, and a boat being hoisted out, it was killed with five musket shot. It was a female, six feet long; its dugs were full of milk, it being a viviparous animal, of the class that suckle their young, and of the kind which the naturalists call Dolphin of the Ancients, and which differs from the other kind of porpoise in the head and jaw, having them long and pointed. This fish had eighty-eight teeth in each jaw; it was cut up and distributed to the ship's company: its colour was not inviting, being almost black; but the haslet and lean flesh were considered as a feast; the latter was a little liverish, but had not the least fishy taste. It was eaten roasted, boiled and fried, having been first soaked in warm water. In their situation, little art was necessary to make any thing that was fresh palatable.

It might be supposed, that the hardships and dangers which had been endured, together with the important geographichal knowledge which had been acquired, would have induced this great navigator, now that he had quitted the South Sea, to rest from his labours, and to have sought his native country by the most direct route. But he, like Cæsar, thinking nothing done, whilst any thing remained undone, was still intent on farther researches, and resolved to traverse the Atlantic Ocean, between the 50th and 60th degrees of latitude, from the meridian of Cape Horn to that of the Cape of

Good Hope, in which he spent upwards of three months. That the officers and men quietly acquiesced in this farther extension of their toils and perils, deprived of the two essentials to the enjoyment of life, nourishing food and human intercourse —that amidst the chaotic scenes which yet detained them, a general spirit of discontent, and a strong propensity to mutiny did not prevail—prove, that their great leader possessed that elevation of mind and insinuating manner, which effectually control the most boisterous spirits, and make the heaviest and the longest sufferings supportable, merely by his partaking in them, and cheerfully undergoing them.

CHAP. III.

Captain Cook's cruise in the Southern Atlantic Ocean, with an account of the lands discovered in that sea.

HAVING spent eighteen days on the coast of Terra del Fuego, during which time captain Cook accurately explored Staten Island, he quitted it on the 4th of January 1775, sailing south-eastward, in order to pass a third summer season to the southward. On leaving Staten Island, he observes that it is amazing to see how different animals, which inhabit this little spot, are mutually reconciled. They seem to have entered into a league not to disturb each other's tranquillity. The sea-lions occupy most of the sea-coast; the sea-bears take up their abode in the island; the shags have posts in the highest cliffs; the penguins fix their quarters where there is the most easy communication to and from the sea; and the other birds choose more retired stations. We have seen all these animals mix

together, like domestic cattle and poultry in a farm-yard, without one attempting to molest the other: nay, I have often observed the eagles and vultures sitting on the hills among the shags, without either the old or young of the latter being disturbed by their presence. It may be asked how these birds of prey live? I suppose on the carcases of seals and birds, which die by various causes, and probably in no small numbers, as they are so numerous.

The first object of this cruise was, to discover an extensive coast laid down by Mr. Dalrymple, in his chart, in which is the gulph of St. Sebastian; afterwards it was designed farther to explore the southern part of the Atlantic Ocean. This coast had been laid down between 40° and 53′ west longitude, in the latitude of 54° and 58′ south, but no such land was met with; and captain Furneaux, in the Adventure, the year before passed across that part where the eastern and western shores are laid down, without seeing land. It appears, therefore, that either this gulf does not exist, or that it is not rightly laid down, either in the English or French charts. On the 14th of January, being in latitude 53° 56′ south, longitude 39° 24′ west, land was discovered; its mountains appeared of a vast height, covered with snow and ice, in most places quite to the water's edge: towards the south end several low islands were seen, which appeared to have some verdure upon them, and were, therefore, called the Green Islands. This land, which was at first supposed to be part of a great continent, was found at length to be an island of seventy leagues in circuit, between the latitudes of 53° 57′, and 54° 57′, and longitude 38° 13′ and 35° 34′ west, extending south-east by east, and north-west by west, and is thirty-

one leagues long in that direction; its greatest breadth is about ten leagues. It seemed to abound with bays and harbours, which the vast quantities of ice render inaccessible the greatest part of the year. This large island received the name of Southern Georgia. Captain Cook landed in a bay on the northern side of this island, which he called Possession Bay: here he displayed his colours in three different places, and took possession of this country in his majesty's name, under a discharge of small arms. Two rocky islands are situated on the north end, one of which was named Willis's Island, from the person who discovered it; it is a craggy cliff, nearly perpendicular, which contained the nests of many thousand shags. The other received the name of Bird Island, from the innumerable flocks of birds of all sorts that were seen upon it, from the largest albatrosses down to the least peterels. Several porpoises and seals were likewise observed, which probably came to breed on these inhospitable shores. The head of the bay, as well as two places on each side, were terminated by perpendicular ice-cliffs of considerable height, such as is found in the harbour of Spitsbergen, in the northern hemisphere. Pieces were continually breaking off and floating out to sea, and a great fall happened whilst they were in the bay, which made a noise like cannon. The other parts of the country were not less savage and horrible. The wild rocks raised their lofty summits till they were lost in the clouds; and valleys lay covered with snow. Not a tree was to be seen, nor a shrub even big enough to make a tooth-pick. The only vegetation observed was a strong bladed grass, growing in tufts, wild burnet, and a plant like moss, which sprung from the rocks. Seals or sea-bears

were pretty numerous. Among them was a huge animal, of the same kind with the sea-lions described in lord Anson's voyage: a midshipman shot it through the head while it lay asleep. It was all over of a dark grey colour, with a slight olive cast, something like the seals in the northern hemisphere: it likewise resembled those animals in the shape of its fore-feet, and the want of external ears; its nose projected far beyond the mouth, and it had a loose wrinkled skin: this animal was about thirteen feet long. Here was found a flock of about twenty penguins, of a much greater size than any before seen, being thirty-nine inches long, and weighing forty pounds. The seals and penguins killed here were very acceptable food to the whole crew; for any kind of fresh meat was eagerly coveted. "For my own part," says captain Cook, "I was now, for the first time, heartily tired of salt meat of every kind; and though the flesh of the penguins could scarcely vie with bullock's liver, it being fresh was sufficient to make it go down." Even the climate of Terra del Fuego, though lying more to the southward, is mild with respect to that of Georgia, the difference in the thermometer being observed to be at least ten degrees. Besides being uninhabitable, South Georgia does not appear to contain a single article for which it might be visited occasionally by European ships. Not a river or stream of fresh water was seen on the whole coast.

Captain Cook left the southern part of this island on the 26th of January, and steered east-south-east until he arrived in latitude 60 degrees, further than which he did not intend to go, unless he observed some certain signs of meeting with land. These high southern latitudes, where nothing was to be

found but ice and thick fogs, had at length tired even this persevering navigator. On the 30th of January they passed one of the largest ice-islands that had been seen during the voyage. Many on board were at this time afflicted with severe rheumatic pains and colds, and some were suddenly taken with fainting fits, since their unwholesome juiceless food could not supply the waste of animal spirits. As the ship was now proceeding northward, the hope of soon reaching a milder climate diffused a general satisfaction; but another frozen country rose to their view, and threatened to retard the accomplishment of their wishes. The discovery of this land was made on the the 31st of January, at seven o'clock in the morning. Captain Cook gave the name of Sandwich Island to this discovery, which may possibly be the northern point of a continent; for he is of opinion, that there is a track of land near the pole, which is the source of most of the ice that is spread over this vast Southern Ocean. He likewise thinks it extends farthest to the north opposite the Southern Atlantic and Indian Oceans, because ice was always found more towards the north in these seas than any where else; which he imagines could not be, if there was not land of considerable extent to the south; but the risk that is run in exploring a coast in these unknown and icy seas is so very great, that he concludes, on the best grounds, that no man will ever venture farther than he has done; and that the lands which lie to the south will never be explored. Thick fogs, snow storms, intense cold, and every other thing that can render navigation dangerous, must be encountered, and these difficulties are greatly heightened by the inexpressibly horrid aspect of the

country; a country doomed by nature never once to feel the warmth of the sun's rays, but to lie buried in everlasting snow and ice. The ports which may be on the coast are in a manner wholly filled up with frozen snow of vast thickness: but if any be so far open as to invite a ship into it, she would run a risk of being fixed there for ever, or of coming out in an ice-island. The islands and floats on the coast, the great falls from the ice-cliffs in the port, or a heavy snow-storm, attended with a sharp frost, would be equally fatal.

The most southern extremity that was seen was called Southern Thule, and lies in latitude 59° 30′ S. longitude 27° 30′ W. Proceeding northward many projecting points of land were discovered; the mountains appeared to be of vast height, their summits being constantly wrapped in clouds, and the lower parts covered with snow down to the water edge. These captain Cook named in the order that they were seen, viz. Thule, Freezeland Peak, Cape Bristol and Cape Montagu; with an island that received the name of Saunders, situated 58° 27′ S. latitude, 26° 44′ W. longitude, and two small ones, which were named Candlemas Isles; they are of no great extent, but of considerable height, and covered with snow. The whole country had the most desolate and horrid appearance imaginable; not a single blade of grass could be discerned on it, and it seemed to be forsaken even by the amphibious and lumpish animals which dwelt on South Georgia. It remains very doubtful whether the different projecting points of Thule, Cape Bristol and Cape Montagu, form one connected land, or several distinct islands; and this may probably continue undetermined for ages to come, since an expeditio-

to those inhospitable parts of the world, besides being extremely perilous, does not seem likely to be productive of great advantages to mankind. Prudence would not permit the commander to venture near a coast subject to thick fogs, where there was no anchorage, and every part was blocked and filled up with ice, and the whole country, from the summits of the mountains down to the very brink of the cliffs which terminate the coast, was covered two fathoms thick with everlasting snow. "It would have been rashness in me," says captain Cook, "to have risked all that had been done during the voyage in discovering and exploring a coast, which, when discovered and explored, would have answered no end whatever, or have been of the least use to navigation or geography, or indeed to any other science.

On the 15th of February he bore away to the northward, having crossed the meridian of Greenwich in latitude 57° 50′, and on the 19th, sailed in the direction in which Cape Circumcision is laid down by Bouvet, without observing the least indications of land, though the weather was favourable to discovery. Captain Furneaux likewise, passing between Georgia and Sandwich Land, crossed the meridian of Cape Circumcision, in the latitude of 57° 50′ S. without meeting with any land. The solicitude of all on board to arrive at an European port, was now risen to the most impatient height; their voyage had then lasted twenty-seven months, after leaving the Cape of Good Hope, since which they had not touched at any European settlement, but had been severed from all intercourse with their country, their friends, relations, and domestic endearments. Whilst thus cut off from all the plea-

sures of social intercourse, and general society, they had been exposed to such a continued series of impending dangers in their southern cruises, as was sufficient to appal the most intrepid spirits; nor were their internal hardships less severe than their outward perils were imminent; they had lived chiefly on salt provisions, not having passed more than six months out of the whole twenty-seven on shore, at different islands, and this small proportion made up at very different intervals of time: these periods afforded the only opportunities for procuring refreshments; and during a part of this, and especially the last year's cruise, no fresh provisions could be obtained at several islands. The account which captain Cook gives of their situation at this period is as follows: "My people were yet healthy, and would cheerfully have gone wherever I had thought proper to lead them; but I dreaded the scurvy laying hold on them, at a time when we had nothing left to remove it. I must say farther, that it would have been cruel in me to have continued the fatigues and hardships they were continually exposed to, longer than was absolutely necessary. Their behaviour throughout the whole voyage merited every indulgence which it was in my power to give them. Animated by the conduct of the officers, they showed themselves capable of surmounting any difficulty or danger which came in their way, and never looked upon either the one or the other as being at all heightened by our separation from the Adventure." As they approached a place which had some intercourse with Europe, their hopes and fears began to be anxiously excited; all the tender and endearing ties at home, "relations dear, and all the charities," now took

entire possession of the breast, and agitated it with the strongest emotions.

March 16th, being between latitude 35 and 36 degrees south, a ship was seen to windward, and in three hours afterwards, they came in sight of another. The eagerness with which every person on board bent his eyes towards these welcome objects, was the strongest proof of that impatient longing for an intercourse with Europeans, which till then had been suppressed by the attentions which their situation, and regard to personal safety, demanded. Two tedious days, however, passed in this state of tantalization, before they could come up with either of the ships; at length they got within five miles of one of them, which proved to be a Dutch East-Indiaman. A boat was hoisted out, aud sent on board her, and in a few hours returned with the welcome news, that there was universal peace in Europe. The pleasure of this intelligence was, however, in a great measure allayed, by an account of the massacre of the Adventure's boat's crew, as has been related. The Dutch captain having been long at sea from Bengal, lamented that he had no refreshments to offer. In the afternoon, they got sight of two Swedish, one Danish, and an English ship, the latter of which bore down to them, and lieutenant Clerke, the elder Mr. Forster, and a midshipman, went on board her. This ship was the True Briton, captain Broadly, on her return from China. The gentlemen were received with a generous hospitality, and invited to dinner. These three famished circumnavigators, who had not seen any of the coarsest kind of fresh meat for six weeks, attacked with the highest relish a dish of fattened Chinese quails, and a delicious goose, which their kind

entertainer reckoned very homely fare. On relating how long they had been absent from any European settlement, how long they had lived upon salt beef, and how oft they had regaled themselves with seals, albatrosses and penguins, the captain and the mates dropped their knives and forks, and in pure pity to the strangers, resigned all pretensions to their dinner. At parting captain Broadly presented them with a large fat pig, and several geese, on which the gentlemen of the ship dined the two following days.

On the 22d of March, 1775, the Resolution came to an anchor in Table Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope, which they found was only the 21st, according to the reckoning of the people on shore, they having advanced a whole day by sailing round the world to the eastward. On the 27th of April, captain Cook sailed from the Cape, and in his way to England touched at St. Helena, the western islands of Ascension, Fernando Norenha and Fayal, and on the 29th of July made the land near Plymouth, having been absent from England three years and eighteen days, in which time it is computed that they ran over a greater space of sea than any ship ever did before; since, according to Mr. Forster, taking all the tacks together, they form more than thrice the circumference of the globe. Thus was completed a voyage which will immortalize the conducter of it, being not only the most extensive, but the most instructive one: in it he not only discovered, but surveyed vast tracts of new coasts; hereby he dispelled the illusion of Terra Australis Incognita, and fixed the bounds of the habitable earth, as well as those of the navigable ocean, in the southern hemisphere. But being the most able navigator which any age or country ever produced

is not captain Cook's ultimate praise; his humane and judicious attention to every means which might possibly conduce to the healthiness of his crew, gives him an eminent place among the distinguished few who are true friends to mankind; and his endeavours were successful to a prodigy. With a company of 118 men, he performed a voyage of upwards of three years, throughout all climates, from 52 degrees north to 71 degrees south, with the loss of only one man by a distemper. Even in the most healthful climate, and the best condition of life, an instance of so small a number of deaths, among so many men, within such a space of time, can hardly be produced. From whence it plainly appears, that marine diseases are not caused by any malignity in the sea air; and a voyage round the world may be undertaken with less danger to health than a common tour in Europe. From the bills of mortality in Europe, it is computed that three men out of a hundred annually die; according to which, it might have been expected that at least ten men would have died on this voyage: it is not therefore to be supposed, that on another voyage, although the means of preserving health are provided as amply, and used as skilfully, that the crew would be equally preserved. The means by which this important end was obtained was obtained were no less simple than efficacious: the captain took on board a quantity of malt, of which was made sweet wort: to such of the crew as showed the least symptom of the scurvy, and also to such as were thought to be threatened with that disorder, this was given, from one, two or three pints a day each man, or in such proportion as Mr. Patten, the surgeon, found necessary, which sometimes amounted to three quarts. Captain Cook

pronounces this to be one of the best antiscorbutic medicines yet discovered. Sour-krout was in a large quantity, it being both a wholesome vegetable food, and highly antiscorbutic, and does not spoil by keeping; a pound of this was served to each man, while at sea, twice a week, or oftener, as was thought necessary. An ounce of portable broth to each man was boiled in their peas three days in each week. Rob of lemon and orange was used; sugar in the room of oil, and wheat for a part of the store of oatmeal. Beside these salutary articles of diet, certain regulations were established on board the ship, which contributed very essentially to promote the healthiness of the crew. They were at three watches, instead of watch and watch; (the last is the general practice at sea) that is, he divided the whole crew into three companies, and by putting each company upon the watch by turns, four hours at a time, every man had eight hours free for four of duty; by which means they were not so much exposed to the weather, and they had generally dry clothes to shift themselves when they got wet. Proper methods were used to keep their persons, hammocks, bedding, clothes, &c. constantly clean and dry; equal care was taken to keep the same state between decks: once or twice a week she was aired with fires, and when this could not be done, she was smoaked with gun-powder mixed with vinegar and water. The captain also frequently caused a fire to be made in an iron pot, at the bottom of the well, which was of great use in purifying the air in the lower parts of the ship. The ship's coppers were kept constantly clean. The fat which boiled out of the beef and pork was never suffered to be given to the people, being thought

to promote the scurvy. Fresh water was taken in wherever it could be procured, even though it was not wanted, as that immediately drawn from a spring was considered as more wholesome than what had been kept some time on board the ship; and of this necessary article there was always plenty during the voyage for every useful purpose.

Captain Cook, soon after his return, presented to the Royal Society a paper, describing at large the means which he used to preserve the health of his seamen, for which invaluable information he was voted their annual honorary medal. On this occasion, Sir John Pringle, their president, delivered an oration, in which, after paying that officer the most elegant and deserved eulogiums, he concludes with, "Permit me, Gentlemen, to deliver this medal, with his unperishing name engraved upon it, into the hands of one who will be happy to receive that trust, and to know that this respectable body never more cordially or meritoriously bestowed that faithful symbol of their esteem and affection; for, if Rome decreed the civic crown to him who saved the life of a single citizen, what wreaths are due to that man, who having himself saved many, perpetuates, in your Transactions, the means by which Britain may now, on the most distant voyages, preserve numbers of her intrepid sons, her mariners, who, braving every danger, have so laboriously contributed to the fame, to the opulence, and to the maritime empire of their country."

The great service rendered to science by this interesting and wonderful voyage, was obtained at a very small expence; the whole cost of fitting out the ships, and the pay of officers and men, did not

exceed twenty thousand pounds: a sum of little account, when any plan of royal magnificence is to be undertaken; even a few pictures, now placed at Hampton-Court palace, cost as much.

THIRD VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD,

BY CAPTAIN JAMES COOK,

IN THE RESOLUTION, ACCOMPANIED BY THE DISCOVERY, CAPTAIN CLERKE.

CHAP. I.

Object of the voyage. Departure from England. Arrival at the Sandwich Islands.

ON the return of captain Cook from his polar traverse, he was promoted from the rank of master and commander, to that of a captain in the navy; and soon after, in reward for his eminent services, he was assigned an honourable retreat, by being appointed one of the four captains of Greenwich Hospital. Alike caressed by the great and the learned, by natives and foreigners, who all beheld him with an enthusiastic kind of veneration, in the prime of life, and the full possession of health and spirits, he was one of those few favoured mortals, for whom extraordinary merit has obtained an immediate, ample, and satisfactory recompense. Those navigators, who have transmitted their names with the greatest renown to future ages, have, in general, been no less remarkable for the unworthy and mortifying returns they have met with from mankind, after their labours had been crowned with success. But it was captain Cook's good fortune to live in times when merit is both discerned and requited. To a mind ardent and enterprising as his,

perhaps a long continuance of such enviable and flattering ease, would have been found deficient of happiness, and the philosophic satirist might have quoted him as an additional example of the vanity of human wishes: but the designs formed by his sovereign, to gain a still more perfect information in geography, did not allow time for this state of apathy to creep upon a man formed by nature to have his life devoted to great pursuits.

The eastern extremity of Asia, and western coast of North America, remained unknown; and although a northern passage from Europe to Asia had become an early and a favourite object, after the discovery of a new world, yet no attempt had been made to navigate the north sea from the Pacific Ocean. As a navigation of this kind therefore was not only new, but connected with the most important part of geographical knowledge, which yet remained to be revealed, namely, the exact position of the extreme points of the two continents; another voyage was resolved upon soon after the return of the Resolution, chiefly with a design to effect those important purposes; which accomplished, nothing would remain to complete the geography of the globe, but what, as an able writer observes, "might justly be called the minutiæ of the science." The operations proposed to be pursued were so novel, so extensive, and so various, that the skill and experience of captain Cook were thought requisite to conduct them: he therefore relinquished the command to which he had been appointed, to engage in the conduct of an expedition, which would expose him to the toils and perils of a third circumnavigation, by a track hitherto unattempted. To excite to the fullest exertions in this undertaking,

an act of parliament was passed, by which the discovery of any northern passage between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans was rendered entitled to the reward of £20,000, which, by an act passed in the year 1745, had been restrained to such ships as should discover a passage through Hudson's Bay; and king's ships were now entitled to the reward on making such discovery, from which they had been excluded by the former act.

The Resolution sloop was appointed to this service, so little injury had she sustained in her former voyage; and the Discovery, a vessel of 300 tons, was joined in the same expedition, the command of which was given to captain Clerke, who had been twice round the world with captain Cook. On board the Resolution, besides the captain, were three lieutenants, the master, boatswain, carpenter, gunner, surgeon, three master's mates, six midshipmen, two surgeon's mates, the captain's clerk, the master at arms, corporal, armourer and his mate, sail-maker and his mate, three boatswain's mates, three carpenter's mates, two gunner's mates, carpenter's crew four, six quarter-masters, forty-five able seamen, a lieutenant of marines, serjeant, two corporals and fifteen privates; amounting in the whole on board the Resolution to 115; on board the Discovery were 80, officers and men.

This expedition furnished an opportunity to convey Omai, who had accompanied captain Furneaux, in the Adventure, and had resided in England upwards of two years, to his native country. We have already spoken of his departure from Huaheine, one of the Society Islands. On his arrival in England, the Earl of Sandwich and Sir Joseph Banks honoured him with their patronage and protection.

His noble patron introduced him to the king at Kew; and, during his stay in England, he was caressed by many of the principal nobility. He naturally imitated that easy and elegant politeness, which is prevalent among the great, and which is one of the ornaments of civilized society. Indeed he adopted the manner, the occupations, and amusements of his companions in general, and gave many proofs of a quick conception, and a lively fancy. He appears, however, to have been treated, whilst he resided here, rather as a fashionable exhibition than as a rational being. No attention seems to have been paid to the enriching his mind with useful knowledge, such as might have rendered him a valuable acquisition to his country on his return thither; no means were used to instruct him in agriculture, in any mechanic art, or useful manufacture; and above all, to possess him with a moral sense, to teach him the exalted ideas of virtue, and the sublime principles of revealed religion. During his stay in England, he was inoculated for the small-pox. At parting with his friends here, his tears flowed plentifully, and his whole behaviour bespoke him to be sincerely affected at the separation; but though he lived in the midst of amusements during his residence in England, his return to his native country was always in his thoughts; and though he was not impatient to go, he expressed a satisfaction as the time of his return approached. Whenever captain Cook talked to him about England, and of those who, during his stay, had honoured him with their protection and friendship, his spirits were observed to be strongly affected, and it was with difficulty he could refrain from tears: but the instant the conversation turned to his own islands, his eyes began

to sparkle with joy. He was deeply impressed with a sense of the good treatment he had received, and entertained the highest ideas of the country and the people; but the pleasing prospect he now had before him, of returning home, loaded with a profusion of such presents as he well knew would be esteemed valuable treasures there; and the flattering hope which the possession of these gave him, of attaining to a distinguished superiority among his countrymen, were considerations which operated by degrees to suppress every uneasy sensation; and he seemed quite happy when he got on board the ship.

On the 10th of June, 1776, whilst the two ships lay at Long-reach, captain Cook took on board a bull and two cows, with three calves and some sheep, to which he intended to add other useful animals at the Cape of Good Hope; he also furnished himself with a large assortment of European garden seeds, with abundance of iron tools, and various kinds of trinkets. He took with him a copy of Mr. Harrison's time-keeper, constructed by Mr. Kendal. On board the Discovery, Mr. William Bayly embarked as astronomical professor. Mr. Anderson, captain Cook's surgeon, was well versed in natural history. Mr. Webber, an eminent painter, embarked on board the Resolution, for the purpose of making drawings of such picturesque scenes as should present themselves, and to preserve an exact representation of the persons, dresses, ornaments, weapons of the inhabitants, with whatever other subjects might gratify general curiosity. Both ships had a supply of provisions for two years and upwards.

Previous to the sailing of the two ships, in the beginning of the summer of 1766, lieutenant Pick-

ersgill, who had been lieutenant on board the Resolution in the former voyage, was appointed to the command of the armed brig, the Lion, and ordered to proceed in her to Davis's Straits, and from thence to Baffin's Bay, to explore the coast thereof, and to return in the fall of the year. Mr. Lane, master of the vessel, was appointed to survey, make charts, and take views of the several bays, harbours, and different parts of the coast. Pickersgill was not to attempt the discovery of any passage; but the object of his voyage was to bring back some information the same year, which might serve to regulate the operations of a voyage which was designed to be made the ensuing summer into that bay, to try for the discovery of a passage on that side, with a view to co-operate with captain Cook, who, it was supposed, would about that time be trying for this passage on the opposite side of America. Pickersgill did not acquit himself to the satisfaction of the Board of Admiralty, and therefore lieutenant Young was sent in the same ship, the next year, into Baffin's Bay. By his instructions, he was to explore its western shores, to examine every considerable river or inlet which he might there discover, and to attempt a passage through some of them into the Pacific Ocean; which if he effected, and the season should be too far advanced for him to return the same way, then he was to fix upon some convenient place to winter in, and endeavour to return by the same passage, as early in the next year as the season would admit. He had the discretionary power of wintering in Baffin's Bay, in case he saw a probability of tracing a passage, but should not be able to get the vessel he commanded through it in the course of the year, and was to resume the

attempt the next year. Young failed equally with Pickersgill. It was necessary to premise thus much, in order to convey a full idea of the extent of the design formed at this time: let us now return to the Resolution and Discovery.

On the 11th of July, the Resolution sailed from Plymouth Sound; the Discovery being appointed to join her at the Cape. She touched at the island of Teneriffe; on the 13th of August arrived at Port Praya, in the island of St. Jago, a place afterwards famous for the action between an English squadron commanded by commodore Johnstone, and a French squadron under M. de Suffrein. On the 1st of September, crossed the line in latitude 27° 38′ west, and anchored in Table Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope, on the 18th of October. On the 10th of November, the Discovery arrived in the bay, having sailed from Plymouth on the 1st of August. Here captain Cook added to his stock of live cattle two young bulls, two heifers, two young stone-horses, two mares, two rams, several ewes and goats, together with some rabbits and poultry, all intended for New Zealand, Otaheite, and the neighbouring islands. The two ships sailed from the Cape on the 13th of November.

The instructions under which captain Cook acted, directed him to proceed to the southward, in search of some islands said to have been seen by the French in latitude 48 degrees south, and about the meridian of the Mauritius, which, if found, he was to survey carefully for a good port, which at least might furnish shelter, wood and water. He was not to spend too much time in such search, but to proceed to Otaheite, or the Society Islands, touching at New Zealand in his way thither, if he found

it necessary; to leave those islands in the beginning of February, 1777, or sooner if he should judge it necessary, and then proceed in as direct a course as possible to New Albion, endeavouring to fall in with it in latitude 45 degrees north: in which course he was to lose no time in search of new lands, nor to stop at any he might fall in with, unless necessary for a supply of wood and water. He was also instructed not to touch at any part of the Spanish dominions on the western part of the continent of America, unless driven thither by some unavoidable accident.

In consequence of these instructions, captain Cook sailed in a south-east direction, and on the 12th of December land was seen extending from S. E. by S. to S. E. by E. It proved to be two islands; the most southerly and largest captain Cook supposed to be about fifteen leagues in circuit, and to be in the latitude 46° 53′ S. and longitude 37° 46′ E. The distance from one island to the other is about five leagues; neither tree nor shrub could be discovered by the best glasses on either island. These two islands, as also four other, which lie from nine to twelve degrees of longitude, were discovered in the year 1772, by captains Marion du Fresne and Crozat, the former of whom unhappily lost his life at New Zealand, in the same voyage. As the French discoverer gave them no names, captain Cook called the two largest Prince Edward's islands, after the king's fourth son, and the other four Marion's and Crozat's islands, to commemorate their discoveries.

Captain Cook then proceeded to search for the lands seen by Kerguelen, which he descried on the 24th of December; it was an island of considerable

height, and about three leagues in circuit, which that navigator named Croy or Crouy. Another soon after appeared, of the same magnitude, one league to the eastward, which Kerguelen had called Isle Rolland, after the name of his ship. Between these two, some smaller ones were seen, and others to the northward. A good harbour was found on the southern coast, which the ships entered on Christmas day.

Here were penguins and other birds, together with seals in great abundance, and so entirely destitute of fear, that great quantities were killed for the sake of their blubber or fat, to supply oil for the lamps, and other purposes. Fresh water abounded, but no wood was to be seen, and but very little herbage of any sort: no fish were caught, but the birds furnished an inexhaustible store of fresh provisions. The crews being allowed to make excursions into the country, found it barren and desolate in the highest degree. In these rambles, a quart bottle was found on the north side of the harbour, fastened to a projecting rock; it contained a piece of parchment, with the following inscription:

Ludovico XV. Galliarum
rege, et d de Boynes
regi a Secretis ad res
maritimas annis 1772 &
1773.

The French landed on another bay, upon the west side of this land, a part of the coast which our ships did not touch at. Boiseguehenneu, another French navigator, who followed Kerguelen pretty closely, touched on these western parts. The latter,

in his second voyage, left this bottle on the 6th of January, 1774; it was called by the French, Baie de l'Oiseau, from the name of their frigate. Captain Cook wrote on the other side of the parchment:

Naves Resolution
et Discovery
de Rege Magnæ Britanniæ
Decembris 1776.

He then put it again into a bottle, together with a silver two-penny piece of 1772, and having covered the mouth with a leaden cap, he placed it in a pile of stones, erected for that purpose upon a little eminence, near to the place where it was first found; in which position it cannot escape the notice of any European, whom chance or design may bring into this port. Here he displayed the British flag, and named the place Christmas Harbour, from having arrived in it on that festival. On quitting the harbour, the captain steered south-east one-half south along the coast, to which the Resolution and Adventure had approached within seventeen leagues in February, 1773, at the very time when the two ships separated: but no such land at that time was known to exist. At such a distance it might very well have been seen, had the weather been clear.

Captain Cook discovered the whole sea before him to be chequered with large beds of rock weed, which grow on rocky shoals, so that it is always dangerous to sail over them, before they are well examined, more especially when there is no surge of the sea to discover the danger. A line of sixty fathom never struck ground: after running in this

manner above an hour, a lurking rock was discovered just even with the surface of the sea, lying in the middle of one of those large beds of weeds. After continuing the course half an hour longer, the ships were much embarrassed with these shoals; but at length they anchored in a safe harbour about 5 o'clock that afternoon, and were scarce secured, when it began to blow very strong. To this harbour captain Cook gave the name of Port Palliser. Latitude 49° 3′ S. longitude 69° 37′ E.

A southern point of land was called by captain Cook, Point Charlotte, in honour of her majesty; a high projecting point was called Prince of Wales's Foreland: and the most southern point of the whole coast Cape George. All the land to the south-west, quite to Cape George, is composed of elevated hills, that rise directly from the sea, one behind another, to a considerable height: most of the summits were capped with snow, and appeared quite naked and barren; the smallest vestige of a tree or shrub was not discernible, either inland or on the coast. This land occupies not much more than one degree and a quarter of latitude: its extent from east to west still remains unfixed. Mr. Anderson describes this island thus: "The verdure, which appears at a little distance from the shore, would flatter one with the expectation of meeting with some herbage; but in this we were very much deceived; for, on landing, it appeared that this lively colour was occasioned by one small plant, not much unlike some sort of saxifrage, which grows in large spreading tufts to a considerable way up the hills. It forms a surface of a pretty large texture, and grows on a kind of rotten turf, into which one sinks a foot or two at every step. This turf indeed might, in cases of

necessity, serve for fuel, and is the only thing met with here that could possibly be applied to such an use." The whole catalogue of plants found here did not exceed sixteen or eighteen. The only remarkable fish caught was about the size of a small haddock, though quite different; the snout being lengthened, the head armed with strong spines, the rays of the back fine, long, and very strong; the belly large, and the body without scales. The rocks or foundations of the hills are chiefly composed of a dark blue and very hard stone, intermixed with small particles of glimmer or quartz. "This seems," says Mr. Anderson, "to be one of the most universal productions of nature, as it constitutes whole mountains in Sweden, Scotland, the Canary Islands, the Cape of Good Hope, and at this place." Nothing that had the least appearance of an iron ore or metal was seen, and none of the stones found here were acted upon by aqua-fortis, or attracted by the magnet. Whilst captain Cook was exploring this desolate coast, two young bulls, one heifer, two rams, and several of the goats died. On the 30th of December he stood out to sea, having been employed eighteen days in examining this uninhabitable spot.

After leaving Kerguelen's Land, the ships proceeded east by north. Soon after the wind veered to the north, and continued to blow from thence during eight days, and a thick fog prevailed all that time, so that the ships ran above three hundred leagues in the dark. The commander sent out a boat to captain Clerke, appointing Adventure Bay, in Van Diemen's Land, as the place of rendezvous, in case of separation; but notwithstanding the foggy weather, they found means to keep together.

On the 12th of January, 1777, the northerly winds ended in a calm, and a wind from the south soon after sprung up, which was soon followed by fair and clear weather. On the 24th, at three o'clock in the morning, the coast of Van Diemen's Land was discovered. Here was seen an elevated rock, which captain Cook called the Eddystone, from its great resemblance to that light-house. About a league more to the eastward, another projecting rock was seen, and called Swilly. These two are the conspicuous summits of a ledge of rocks under water, on which the sea, in many places, breaks very high. Captain Cook conjectures that some good harbours might be found on this coast. On the 26th the two ships anchored in Adventure Bay, so named by captain Furneaux in the Adventure, who first discovered it in March, 1773. Wood and water were here found in abundance, but grass was scarce and very coarse. A great quantity of fish was caught, most of which were what the seamen call elephant-fish.

Whilst a party was cutting wood, eight men and a boy of the natives paid them a visit. They approached without betraying any marks of fear, or rather with the greatest confidence imaginable, for none of them had any weapons except one, who held in his hand a stick about two feet long, and pointed at one end. They were quite naked, and wore no ornaments, but were distinguished by large punctures of ridges raised on different parts of their bodies, some in straight, and others in curved lines. A day or two after, about twenty of the natives, men and boys, joined the ships companies, without expressing the least sign of fear or mistrust. One among this group was conspicuously deformed, and

not more distinguishable for the hump upon his back, than by the drollery of his gestures, and the seeming humour of his speeches, which he was very fond of exhibiting for the entertainment of his visitors; but unfortunately they could not understand his language, which appeared to be different from that spoken by the inhabitants of the more northern parts of New Holland, whom captain Cook met with in his first voyage. At the request of the gentlemen they set up a piece of wood as a mark, and threw a stick, which one of them had in his hand, when distant about twenty yards, but showed very little dexterity at hitting the mark. Omai, to show the superiority of fire-arms, discharged a musket, at the report of which all the natives ran into the woods: after which captain Cook took care to have two pigs, a sow and a boar, carried about two miles into the woods, and left there. As the natives appeared eager to destroy animals, our commander determined to leave no more there; and the hope which he entertained, of stocking the country with swine, was founded on the fondness which that creature discovers for the thickest cover of the woods, and from his soon becoming wild. Some among this second party of Indians wore three or four folds of small cord, made of the fur of some animal, loosely round their necks, and others had a narrow slip of kanguroo skin tied round their ankles. Our commander gave to each of them a string of beads and a medal, which they received with some apparent satisfaction. They seemed to set no value on iron or iron tools, and were ignorant even of the use of fish-hooks; the food which they derive from the sea, appeared to be confined to muscles, cockles, and periwinkles.

After this second interview, the men introduced some of their women to a party sent under lieutenant King to cut wood, and to procure grass. These females wore a kanguroo skin, in the same shape as it came from the animal, tied over the shoulders and round the waist; but its only use seemed to be to support their children when carried on their backs, for it did not cover those parts which most nations conceal. "Those who had no children," says Ellis, "were without this or any other covering." The bodies of the women, being, in all other respects, as naked as those of the men, equally black, and marked with scars in the same manner; but they differed from the men, in some having their heads completely shorn or shaven, whilst on others this operation had been performed only on one side: but the greatest number of the women had all the upper part of the head shaven close, leaving a circle of hair all round, somewhat like the tonsure of the Roman ecclesiastics. Many of the children had fine features, and were thought handsome; but of the persons of the women, especially those advanced in years, a less favourable report is made. Some of the gentlemen belonging to the Discovery, however, paid their addresses to them, and made liberal offers of presents, which were rejected with great disdain, either from a sense of virtue, or from a fear of displeasing the men. An elderly man, as soon as he observed these advances by the strangers, ordered all the women and children to retire, which they complied with, though some of them showed a little reluctance.

The land is for the most part of a good height, diversified with hills and valleys, and every where of a greenish hue; it is well wooded, and appears

not to be ill supplied with water. Mr. Anderson, in his account of this spot, seems, in some measure, to differ from captain Cook, in respect to the country being well watered: he speaks of small brooks, which were sufficient to supply the ships with water, but by no means of that size as might have been expected in so extensive a country; and says, that it has many marks of being a very dry country, and might, perhaps, independent of its woods, be compared to Africa about the Cape of Good Hope, though that lies 10 degrees farther northward, rather than to New Zealand, on its other side, in the same latitude, where every valley, however small, is furnished with a considerable stream of water. The heat too appears to be great, as the thermometer stood at 64, 70, and once at 74 degrees; and it was remarked that birds were seldom killed an hour or two, before they were almost covered with small maggots, which may be rather attributed to the heat, than to any peculiar disposition of the climate to render substances putrid. The vast difference of climate between Kerguelen's Land and this peninsula, although the former is not more than 5 degrees more southward than the latter, is very remarkable. According to Ellis, the thermometer was from 34 to 36, and once at 50 degrees, whilst the ships were there.

No mineral bodies, nor indeed stones of any other sort but a white sandy one, were observed. Among the vegetable productions, not one was found which afforded the smallest subsistence for man. The bark of the forest-trees here is white, which makes them appear at a distance as if they had been peeled: it is also thick, and within it are sometimes collected pieces of a reddish transparent gum or resin, which has an astringent taste. "In all our excursions,"

says Ellis, "we saw not one tree that had the least appearance of supplying the inhabitants with food." The only animal of the quadruped kind taken here, was a sort of oppossum, which agrees in many respects with Mr. Pennant's description of the Surinam oppossum, about twice the size of a large rat. The same species was seen in Endeavour River, on captain Cook's first voyage. It is of a dusky colour above, tinged with a brown or rusty cast, and whitish below; about a third of the tail, towards the tip, is white, and bare underneath, by which it probably hangs on the branches of trees, as it climbs them, and lives on berries. The kanguroo, another animal found farther northward in New Holland, and which was described in a former voyage, without all doubt also inhabits here, as the natives make great use of its skin. There are several sorts of birds, but all scarce and shy, from whence it may be supposed, that the natives derive much of their subsistence from them. In the woods are large brown hawks and eagles, crows nearly the same as in England, yellowish parroquets, and large pigeons. Insects, though not numerous, are here in considerable variety. Among them are several sorts of small moths, finely variegated, several sorts of spiders, and some scorpions; but the last are rather rare. The most troublesome insects are the moschettoes, and a large black ant, the pain of whose bite is almost insupportable during the short time it lasts: the moschettoes too make up the deficiency of their number by the severity of their venomous proboscis. The inhabitants seemed mild, cheerful, and without reserve or jealousy to strangers, which might arise from their having little to lose or care for: on their personal activity and genius, no encomiums can be

passed; they did not seem to possess the first to any remarkable degree, and of the last they seemed to have less than the half-animated inhabitants of Terra del Fuego. Their colour is not quite so deep as that of the African negroes.

We are told by Ellis, that potatoes, kidney-beans, peach and apricot stones were planted here.

On the 30th of January, 1777, the two ships put to sea, and the same day were attacked by a violent storm, that came on faintly at first, and was preceded by a degree of heat that was almost intolerable: the mercury in the thermometer rose, as it were instantaneously, from about 70 to near 90 degrees. This heat was of so short a continuance, that it seemed to be wafted away by the breeze which brought it, so that some on board did not perceive it. In the night between the 6th and 7th of February, a marine fell overboard from the side of the Discovery, and was never seen afterwards. Captain Clerke lost his corporal of marines in the same manner, in the evening of the 25th of September, as he was making for the Cape of Good Hope. On the 10th, in the afternoon, they came in sight of New Holland, and on the 12th cast anchor in Queen Charlotte's Sound.

Several canoes filled with natives came alongside of the ships, but very few of the people would venture on board, though captain Cook was well known to them all. Such shyness most probably arose from an apprehension, that this visit was made to their country, in order to revenge the death of the people on board captain Furneaux's ship; but every assurance was given them, that the former friendship still subsisted, and that nothing would be attempted on account of that affair. This at length inspired

the natives with their former confidence. The next day the tents were sent on shore, with the copper and all the empty casks, the astronomer's tents, and parties to wood and water. Coppers were also fixed up on shore, to boil the blubber which had been collected at Kerguelen's Land. As very inconsiderable refreshments had been procured since their departure from the Cape, captain Cook, ever attentive to the health of his men, caused a kind of beer to be brewed from a tree, which bore some resemblance to the spruce-fir, which in five days time was served out, and proved equally salutary and pleasant. The general liking which appeared for this beverage, determined the commander to carry as large a quantity as possible out to sea. The oil party on shore were constantly attended by many of the natives, who showed a fondness for this production, equal to that of any Greenlander for train-oil: they relished the very scrapings of the kettle and dregs of the casks; but a little of the pure stinking oil was a delicious feast. The seamen had taken a disgust to the New Zealand women, insomuch that, although the men were very forward to proffer them, yet no man quitted his station to go to their habitations.

A chief, named Kahoora, came to visit captain Cook; he had headed the party which killed captain Furneaux's people, and himself killed Mr. Rowe, the officer who commanded: many of his countrymen told captain Cook that he was a very bad man, and some of them even importuned the captain to kill the chief. Nor was this blood-thirsty disposition shown only towards this individual, for the people of each hamlet or village by turns applied to our commander to destroy the other. "One would

have thought it impossible," says he, "that so striking a proof of the divided state in which these miserable people lived, could have been produced." Kahoora repeated his visits, which led Omai to express great resentment against that man, and frequently to solicit captain Cook to kill him. The last visit that he made on board the Resolution, Omai expostulated with the captain very earnestly, saying, "Why do you not kill him? you tell me, if a man kills another in England he is hanged for it: this man has killed ten, and yet you will not kill him, though many of his countrymen desire it, and it would be very good." Omai's arguments, though specious enough, had no weight with captain Cook, who desired him to ask the chief, why he had killed captain Furneaux's people? At this question Kahoora folded his arms, hung down his head, and looked like one caught in a trap. Captain Cook believes he expected instant death; but no sooner was he assured of his safety, than he became cheerful, and on repeated assurances that he should not be hurt, he was at length induced to relate the circumstances of that unhappy affair, of which we gave an account in the former voyage. After Kahoora's first fears were over, he was so far from entertaining any apprehensions, that, on seeing the portrait of one of his countrymen hanging up in the cabin, he desired to have his own portrait taken, and sat till Mr. Webber had finished it, without discovering the least impatience. Captain Cook says, he admired his courage, and was not a little pleased to observe the extent of the confidence the chief put in him. He placed his whole safety in the declarations which the captain had uniformly made to those who solicited his death, which were to this effect: "I have

always been a friend to you all, and will continue so, unless you give me cause to act otherwise. As to your inhuman treatment of the seamen, I shall think no more of it, the transaction having happened long ago, and when I was not present; but if ever you make a second attempt of that kind, you may rest assured of feeling the weight of my resentment."

Captain Cook, before his departure, gave to two chiefs a couple of goats, male and female, the she-goat being with kid, and a sow and boar-pig; at the same time obtaining a promise from the chiefs, that they would not kill those animals, which, however, the captain did not place much reliance on their fulfilling. The animals which captain Furneaux sent on shore were all dead; the fate of those which our commander had left in other parts of the country could not be learned, only the natives informed him, that poultry was to be met with wild in the woods; and Tiratou, a powerful chief in that neighbourhood, was said to have a great many cocks and hens in his separate possessions, as also a sow. Not the least vestige remained of the plantations which Mr. Bayly had made in 1773 with English garden seeds; but in all the other gardens, which had been planted at the same time by captain Furneaux, although wholly over-run with the weeds of the country, were found cabbages, onions, leeks, purslane, radishes, and a few potatoes; the latter, which had been brought from the Cape of Good Hope, had been greatly improved by change of soil, and with proper cultivation would be superior to those produced in most other countries.

A youth, about seventeen or eighteen years of age, named Taweiharoea, solicited to accompany

Omai to Otaheite. He was the son of a deceased chief; his mother was still living. The captain gave them both to understand, that if the youth went with him, he must not expect ever to return to his native country: but this did not shake his resolution. The afternoon before the ship left the cove, Tiratoutou, the mother of the young man, came on board to receive her last present from Omai, and the same evening she and her son parted with all the marks of tender affection that might be expected between a parent and a child, who were never to meet again; but she said she would cry no more, and she kept her word, for returning the next morning to take her last farewel of him, during her stay on board she appeared quite cheerful, and went away wholly unconcerned. Kokoa, a boy about nine or ten years of age, attended this youth as his servant: he was presented by his own father, who would have parted with his dog with far less indifference; the very little clothing the boy had he stripped him of, and left him as naked as he was born. It was to no purpose that captain Cook endeavoured to convince these people of the improbability, or rather impossibility, of these youths returning home; no one, not even their nearest relations, seemed to trouble themselves about their future fate.

Our commander, desirous of knowing to what extent they carried their practice of eating human flesh, inquired whether they ate the flesh of such of their friends as had been killed in war, but whose bodies were saved from falling into the enemy's hands. They seemed surprised at the question, which they answered in the negative, expressing some abhorrence at the idea.

No morais, or other places of public worship, were seen; but they have priests, who alone address the gods in prayers for the prosperity of their temporal affairs, such as success in an enterprise against a hostile tribe, or in a fishing party, and the like. Whatever the principles of their religion may be, its institutions appear to have been very strongly inculcated into the natives from their very infancy. A youth, who was on board the Resolution, refrained from eating during the greatest part of the day, on account of his hair being cut, though every method was tried to induce him to break his resolution, and he was tempted with the offer of such victuals as he was known to esteem the most. He said, if he ate any thing that day the Eatooa would kill him: however, towards evening, the cravings of nature got the better of the precepts of his religion, and he ate, though but sparingly. Captain Cook had conjectured before, that they held some superstitious notions about their hair, having frequently observed quantities of it tied to the branches of trees, near some of their habitations, but could never learn what they were.

According to the information of one of the natives, here are snakes and lizards of an enormous size, some of the latter eight feet in length; these sometimes seize and devour men.

A species of philadelphus grows on the eminences here, the leaves of which were drank as tea; they had a pleasant taste and smell, and might make an excellent substitute for the oriental sort. The flax-plant produces a fine silky flax, superior in appearance to any thing we have, and probably as strong: it grows every where near the sea, and in some places a considerable way up the hills, in bunches

or tufts, with sedge-like leaves, bearing on a long stalk yellowish flowers, which are succeeded by a long roundish pod, filled with very thin shining black seeds.

Here are two sorts of cuckoos, one as large as our common sort, of a brown colour, variegated with black; the other not larger than a sparrow, of a splendid green cast above, and elegantly varied with waves of golden, green, brown, and white colours below. Another species of bird found here is of a black colour, with a greenish cast, and remarkable for having a tuft of white coloured feathers hanging under the throat; it was called the poy-bird.

On the 25th of February the two ships left Queen Charlotte's Sound, proceeding north-eastwardly, without any material occurrence until the 29th of March, when the Discovery saw land, which proved to be an island inhabited, the natives of which appeared armed with long spears and clubs, which they brandished in the air with signs of threatening, or, as some on board interpreted their attitudes, with invitations to land. Most of them appeared naked, except having a sort of girdle, which, being brought up between the thighs, covered that part of the body. Some of them had pieces of cloth of different colours, white, striped or chequered, which they wore as a garment thrown about their shoulders; and almost all of them had a white wrapper about their heads, not much unlike a turban, or in some instances like a high conical cap. They were of a tawny colour, and in general of a middle stature, but robust, and inclining to corpulence. They conversed pretty well with Omai, of whom they inquired from whence the ships came, and the name of the captain. The natives, when asked the name

of their island, called it Mangya or Mangeea, and sometimes added Nooe, Nai, Naiwa. It lies in the latitude of 21° 57′ S. longitude 158° 7′.W. The name of their king was Orooaeeka; he had a brother named Mouroos, whose features were agreeable, and his disposition seemed no less so; for he made several droll gesticulations, which indicated both good-nature and a share of humour. He also made others, which seemed of a serious kind; and repeated some words with a devout air, before he ventured to lay hold on the rope at the ship's stern, which was probably to recommend himself to the protection of some divinity. His colour was nearly of the same cast with that common to the most southern Europeans. He had strong straight hair, of a jet black, tied together on the crown of the head with a bit of cloth: his girdle was a substance made of the morus papyrifera, in the same manner as at other islands of this ocean, which was glazed like the sort used by the natives of the Friendly Islands. He had on a kind of sandals, made of a grassy substance interwoven; his beard was long, and the inside of his arms, from the elbow to the shoulder, and some other parts, were punctured or tatooed, after the manner of almost all the inhabitants of the other islands in the South Sea. The lobes of his ears were pierced, or rather slit, and to such a length, that he stuck a knife and some beads in one of them. This island was supposed to be full five leagues in circuit. Such parts of its coast as were seen, were guarded with a reef of coral rocks, on the outside of which the sea was of an unfathomable depth. Mouroos informed captain Cook, that he had no such animals as hogs or dogs, both which, however, he had heard of; but he talked of plantains,

bread-fruit and taro. They salute strangers much after the manner of the New Zealanders, by joining noses, adding however the farther ceremony of taking the hand of the person to whom they are paying civilities, and rubbing it with a degree of force upon their nose and mouth.

These Indians quite disregarded hatchets and nails, but were much pleased with looking-glasses. Like most of their race, they were given to thieving, and one of them very artfully stole a bunch of beads out of one of the boats, with which he swam off. Not a single cocoa-nut could be procured here, nor would the natives part with any thing which they had, which was particularly unfortunate for the stock of live cattle on board, who were almost in a starving condition. At noon, on the next day, the ships made sail; and the day following another island was seen, nearly of the same appearance and extent; a third was presently discerned, much smaller, right a-head. At sight of the ships several canoes put off from the shore; the people in which were presented with some knives, beads, and other trifles, which they did not appear highly to value.

Captain Cook made the chief, whose name was Otteroo, presents of what he thought would be most acceptable to him; but on his going away he seemed rather disappointed than pleased. The people in the canoes were of a blacker complexion than the natives of Mangeea, though in size not unlike them. Ornaments composed of a sort of broad grass, stained with red, and strung with berries of the nightshade, were worn about their necks; their ears were bored, but not slit; and they were punctured upon the legs, from the knee to the heel,

which made them appear as if they wore a kind of boots. They likewise resembled the men of Mangeea in the length of their beards, and, like them, wore a sort of sandals upon their feet. The shore was every where bounded by a steep coral rock, against which the sea broke in a very dreadful surf. As the ships lay full a league from the island, three boats were dispatched to endeavour to procure refreshments, in which went Mr. Gore, first lieutenant of the Resolution, Omai, Mr. Anderson, surgeon of the same ship, and Mr. Burney, first lieutenant of the Discovery. The reception which they met with was friendly and hospitable; but they were detained, with some degree of compulsion, longer than they liked. The wife of one of the chiefs appeared with her child laid in a piece of red cloth, which had been presented to her husband, carrying it with great appearance of tenderness, and suckling it much after the manner of our women.

During this visit, Omai took care to impress the natives with an alarming sense of the force which their visitors were possessed of. He said, though the ships which appeared before them were but small, in comparison with some which were built in the country from whence they came, yet the guns on board them had such power, that they could with the greatest ease, at the distance which the ships lay, destroy the whole island, and kill every soul upon it. He procured credit for this marvellous relation, by producing some cartridges, and setting fire to them: the report, the flash, the smoke, all together, struck the multitude with astonishment, and led them to believe the whole of what Omai had related. He then went to describe the largest ships as equal in dimensions to their

islands; and that the guns used on board those enormous edifices were of so vast a size, that several people might sit within them, and that one of them was sufficient to crush the whole island at a shot.

On this spot were found three natives of the Society Islands, who had been driven there by contrary winds and tempests, though 200 leagues distant. About twenty persons, men and women, embarked on board a canoe at Otaheite, to cross over to Ulietea: a strong contrary wind drove them quite wide of their destination, at the mercy of which wind the boat was carried for a considerable time; but they could not ascertain precisely how long they were thus exposed. Only four of the whole number were alive when they arrived here, and one of them died soon after he came ashore. "This accident," says captain Cook, "may serve to point out the means by which the secluded islands on this vast body of water were peopled." Twelve years had elapsed since this event happened; and the foreigners were so well satisfied with their situation, that they refused the offer which Omai made them, of returning to their own country with him. This island is called Wateeoo by the natives, and lies in latitude 20° 1′ S. longitude 158° 5′ W. It is about six leagues in circumference. The natives called, or were supposed to call, that spot which the ships had just passed, Owhavarouah, a name so different from Mangeea, Nooe, Nainaiwa, which was gathered from its inhabitants, that it is highly probable they spoke of some other island in that neighbourhood, which had not been seen.

From every circumstance, it is indubitable that the natives of Wateeoo sprung originally from the

same stock which had spread itself so wonderfully all over the immense extent of the South Sea. One would suppose, however, that they put in their claim to a more illustrious extraction; for Omai asserted, that they dignified their island with the appellation of Wenooa no te Eatooa, which signifies "a Land of Gods," esteeming themselves a sort of divinities, and possessed with the spirit of the Eatooa. This wild enthusiastic notion Omai seemed much to approve, saying there were instances of its being entertained at Otaheite, but that it was universally prevalent among the inhabitants of Mataiva, or Osnaburg Island.

On the 3d of April, our navigator directed his course to the neighbouring island, where he procured a small supply of the necessaries which he stood in great need of, not only for the crews of the ships, but for the live cattle which were on board, and were then reduced almost to the last extremity. Among other things procured was the Wharra-tree, as it is called at Otaheite, or the Pandanus of the East-Indies, which being of a soft, spongy, juicy nature, the cattle ate it very well, when cut into small pieces; so that it might be said, without any deviation from truth, that they were fed upon billet-wood. About two hundred cocoa-nuts were the only provisions obtained here for the ship's companies. This island was supposed to be about three miles in circuit; it is called Itakootaia and Wenooa-ette, which signifies Little Island. Latitude 19° 15′ S. longitude 158° 13′ W. It is entirely destitute of water, and uninhabited; but there were appearances of its being occasionally visited.

Unfavourable winds, and other unforeseen circumstances, having unavoidably retarded the progress

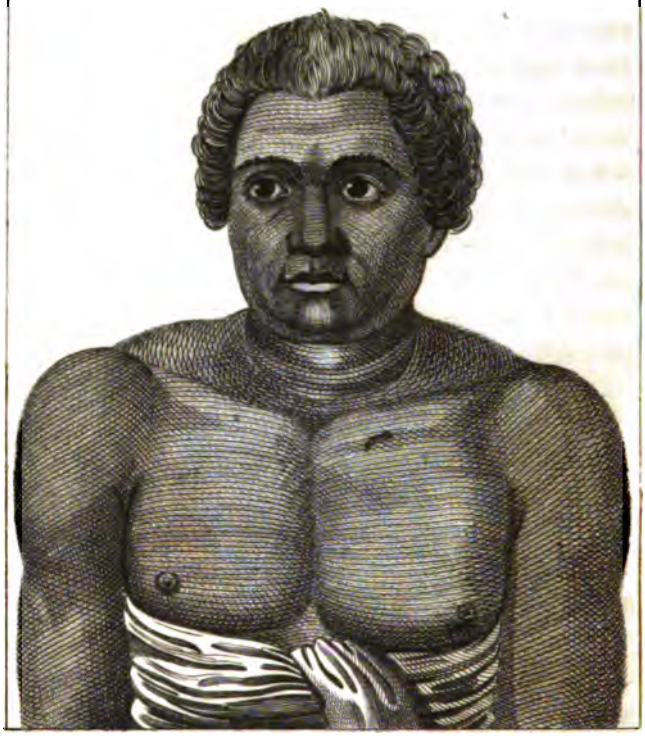
of the ships, and no quantity of fresh provisions having been procured since their departure from New Zealand, it became impossible to proceed that year into the high latitudes of the northern hemisphere, from which they were still at a very great distance, though the season for operation was already begun. "In this situation," says captain Cook, "it was absolutely necessary to pursue such measures as were most likely to preserve the cattle we had on board, in the first place; and in the next place, which was a still more capital object, to save the stores and provisions of the ships, that we might be better able to prosecute our northern discoveries, which could not now commence till a year later than was originally intended."

April 7th, in order to save the water on board, the still was ordered to be kept at work from six o'clock in the morning to four in the afternoon; during which time, from thirteen to sixteen gallons of fresh water were procured. The improvements, as they were called, which had been made in this machine, our sagacious commander considered as much for the worse. The rain which fell on the 11th, enabled the crews to collect five puncheons of water.

A strong wind blowing steadily from the eastward, it became impracticable to reach Otaheite, whither the ships were directing their course; this determined our navigator to proceed to the Friendly Islands. On the 28th of April he arrived at Komango, called by Tasman, Amango. Here lieutenant King was sent on shore with a party, in two boats, who, that same day, returned with a most welcome freight of fruit and roots, and also grass for the cattle. Tooboulangee, the chief of the

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.



Feenou. Chief of the Warriors of Tongataboo.

G. Shea. sc.

Dublin. Published by J. Christie. 17 Ross Lane

island, paid a visit to the commander, and presented him with a hog. As soon as the boats were on board, the ships stood for Annamooka, which Tasman had named Rotterdam; they anchored, as was supposed, almost in the same place with that first discoverer, who was there in the year 1643, and in the very station which the Resolution and Adventure had occupied three years before. Here every refreshment was procured in great plenty, as also wood and water. Their stay, however, was only for a few days; they then proceeded to Hapaee, one of the islands in the group which had not been before visited: here the ships lay from the 14th to the 27th of May, when they again sailed to Annamooka, continuing there a short time, and then proceeding to Tongataboo, or Amsterdam Island.

On their first arrival at Annamooka, Taipa, a chief of that island, introduced a great man, named Feenou, to captain Cook, as the king of all the Friendly Islands. On his approach all the natives were ordered out to meet him, and pay their obeisance, which they did by bowing their heads as low as his feet, the soles of which they also touched with each hand, first with the palm, and then with the back part. Feenou appeared to be about thirty years of age, tall, but thin, and had more of the European features than any native seen before. Captain Cook asked if he was the king, finding him not to be the same person that he remembered to have seen under that character in a former voyage. Taipa officiously answered for him, and enumerated no less than one hundred and fifty-three islands, of which he said Feenou was sovereign. These people gave very frequent proofs of what expert thieves they were: even some of their chiefs

did not think the practice of purloining beneath them; one of these being detected in carrying something off, he was sentenced to receive a dozen of lashes, and to be kept in confinement until he paid a hog for his liberty; after which the ships were no longer troubled with thieves of rank. Their servants or slaves, however, continued such practices afterwards, and upon them a flogging made no greater impression than it would have done upon the main-mast. When any of such happened to be caught in the fact, their masters, far from interceding for them, would often advise the captain to kill them. As they appeared to be equally insensible to the pain and to the shame of corporal chastisement, captain Clerke at length hit upon a mode of treatment which had some effect: he put the delinquent under the hands of the barber, and completely shaved his head: thus pointing them out as objects of ridicule to their countrymen, and enabling the ships crews to keep them at a distance for the future.

The island of Hapaee is composed of four islets of equal size, each being about six or seven miles long, and of a similar height and appearance. The spot in particular on which they landed, was remarkable for its improved state of cultivation, having large plantations inclosed in such a manner, that the fences running parallel to each other, form fine spacious public roads, that would appear ornamental in countries where rural conveniencies had been carried to the greatest perfection. Large districts of ground were covered with the paper-mulberry trees. Some addition was made to the productions of this island, by sowing the seeds of Indian corn, melons, pomkins, and a few others.

Feenou, who accompanied Captain Cook to

Hapaee, paid every possible attention to his guest. By exerting his authority, which was very considerable, provisions of all kinds were brought down to the ships in great abundance, whilst a succession of diversions made the time that they resided on shore pass away very agreeably. These consisted of single combats with clubs, wrestling and boxing-matches; the latter of which were not confined to the men, for two stout wenches encountered each other, for the entertainment of the spectators, but the contest continued a very short time. In these conflicts, although the combatants received many hard blows, the effects of which must have been felt long after, yet no animosity was excited, which strongly marks the placid character of these people. When these athletic games were ended, Captain Cook, to entertain the islanders in return, ordered the marines on shore, and directed them to go through their various evolutions, and to fire vollies, with which the Indians were highly entertained; but all this military expertness was immediately outdone by a dance, performed by men, in which 105 Indians were engaged, each having an instrument in his hand resembling a paddle, with which they made a variety of flourishes, at the same time throwing the body into a diversity of attitudes. In the course of the dance, the changes of situation into which the performers were thrown, showed their skill and adroitness to great advantage, and every part of it was executed with surprising exactness and dexterity. These dances were accompanied with music produced by two drums, or rather hollow logs of wood, from whence they forced some varied notes by beating on them with two sticks: but what chiefly aided the dancers was a chorus of vocal music, in which all the

performers joined, whilst their motions were so skilfully made, that the whole group appeared as one regular machine acted upon by one common principle, and would have been admired on any European theatre. No approbation was expressed by these islanders at any of the musical instruments upon which their guests performed. The only one which at all interested them, was the drum; and even that they thought inferior to their own. Neither here, nor on any other of the islands, could the natives be brought to endure the French horn. Some fire-works, which were played off in the evening, gave them a better opinion of their visiters' taste for amusements, than any thing exhibited till then; the water and sky-rockets excited their astonishment. Afterward the natives again took the lead, and other dances were performed; to assist which, a band of music, or a chorus, consisting of 18 men, seated themselves in the centre of a circle formed by the numerous spectators. Some produced a base, or hollow kind of sounds from pieces of large bamboo, whilst the whole band sung a slow soft air, which so finely tempered the harsher notes of the instruments, that the most perfect judge of the modulation of sweet sounds, could not avoid confessing the vast power and pleasing effect of this simple harmony. Twenty women soon after entered the circle, whose heads were adorned with garlands of crimson flowers, and many of their persons were decorated with leaves of trees curiously scolloped, and ornamented at the edges. They encircled the chorus, with their faces towards them, and began by singing a soft air, to which responses were made by the chorus; and those were alternately repeated. The women accompanied their song with many graceful motions of their hands, and continu-

POULAHO,

King of the Friendly Islands.

Dublin Published by J. Christie 17 Ross Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

ally advancing and retreating with one foot, while the other remained fixed. After this they turned their faces to the assembly, and having sung some time, retreated slowly in a body. Much variety of figure and motion was displayed. A dance of men then succeeded; sometimes they sung slowly in concert with the chorus, making several graceful motions with their hands, but differing from those of the women, at the same time inclining the body alternately on either side, by raising one leg outward, and resting on the other, the arm of the same side being also stretched upward. Then they recited sentences, which were answered by the chorus; and occasionally encreased the measure of the dance by clapping the hands, and quickening the motions of the feet. Towards the conclusion, the rapidity of the music and dancing so much increased, that the movements were hard to be distinguished.

When the ships were about to leave the islands known by the general name of Hapaee, a large sailing canoe came under the stern of the Resolution, in which was a person named Futtafaihe or Poulaho, or both, whom the natives said was king of Tongataboo, and of all the neighbouring islands; and they owned for the first time, that Feenou was not the king, but only a chief of a great power. As it was no concern of captain Cook, to decide upon the claims to the sovereignty of Tongataboo, he received this new king with equal attentions as those shown to the former. "If weight of body," says he, "could confer rank and power, he was certainly the most eminent man in that respect that had been yet seen; for, though not very tall, he was very unwieldy, and almost shapeless with corpulence. He seemed to be about forty years of age, had straight hair, and his features

differed a good deal from those of the bulk of his people. He was a sedate sensible man, viewed the ships, and the several new objects, with uncommon attention, and asked many pertinent questions; one of which was, What could induce them to visit these islands? So unexpected a question at first puzzled the commander what reply to make; but he presently said, that he came there by order of his king, who was a great and mighty prince, and was desirous of entering into a league of friendship; that there was a large stock of hatchets, knives, beads, red cloth, and other things, on board, which he was ready to barter for hogs, and such articles as the island produced. This answer was quite satisfactory to Poulaho; who being desired to walk down into the cabin, some of his attendants objected, saying, it must so happen, that people would walk over his head, which could not be permitted. The captain hereupon directed his interpreter Omai to inform them, that he would give orders that no one should presume to walk upon that part of the deck which was over the cabin. The chief himself seemed less scrupulous in this respect than his attendants; for, waving all ceremony, he walked down without any stipulation.

Omai was very unwilling to admit that Poulaho was king, to the divesting Feenou of that dignity, as an intimate friendship had taken place between them, in testimony of which they had exchanged names.

Feenou was at that time absent, but in a few days he arrived, and seemed much disconcerted at finding his imposition detected; he paid his obeisance to his sovereign by saluting his foot with his head and hands. A conversation afterwards took place between the

real and pretended king, which none of the strangers understood; and no further notice was taken of Feenou's conduct, whose behaviour in other respects marked his character for duplicity and mean artifice; although he exerted himself to the utmost, and very effectually, in procuring refreshments for the ships. It afterwards appeared that his sister was married to Poulaho. The conduct of the king, in every transaction which took place, was worthy of his rank, and bespoke a man who entertained generous and honourable sentiments. This prince presented to captain Cook one of the most esteemed ornamental parts of dress among these islanders, being a cap of red feathers, which gave the wearer a most singular and respectable appearance. They were so highly prized, that no one else on board the ships could obtain them, except captain Clerke and Omai. These caps, or rather bonnets, are composed of the tail-feathers of the tropic bird, with the red feathers of the parroquet wrought upon or jointly with them. They are made so as to tie upon the forehead, without any crown, and have the form of a semi-circle whose radius is 20 inches.

In proceeding to Tongataboo, the Resolution was insensibly drawn upon a large flat, where lay innumerable coral rocks, at different depths below the surface of the water; and, notwithstanding all the care and attention exerted to keep the ship clear, yet she struck on one of them; nor did the Discovery, though behind, escape any better: fortunately neither of the ships stuck fast, nor received any damage. They could not get back without increasing the danger, as they had come in before the wind; nor could they cast anchor but with the certainty of having their cables instantly cut in two by the rocks:

therefore they had no other resource but to proceed; and the water soon deepening, they got off without sustaining any material damage. Whilst they were plying up the harbour, to which they were directed by the natives, the king kept sailing round the Resolution in his canoe. There were at the same time a great many small canoes about the ships; of these, so many as could not get out of the way of the royal vessel, were ran quite over by it, which seemed to give the king as little concern as if they had been logs of wood.

To this instance of the utter contempt in which the chiefs hold the lower class of people, the following is a no less remarkable one. Feenou once expressed a desire to see some proof of the execution which muskets would do at a distance: for which purpose, the marines being then exercising at Hapaee, he desired that they might be ordered to fire at a canoe that happened to be passing by, and kill the man who was in her. When, instead of complying with his request, its cruelty was urged, from the man having committed no crime, the chief replied, that he was only a slave, and his life of no value.

On the island of Tongataboo, the gentlemen of the ship were introduced to a very great personage, whose name was Mareewagee, an old man, and held in greater veneration even than Poulaho, to whom he was related, having the very honorable appellation of Motoou Tonga universally given him, and which signified the father or Tonga of his country. The distinctions of rank established in this country seem still to be involved in much obscurity. One day when the commander and some of his officers were on shore, and the king was sat down

with them at dinner, it was observed that he would neither eat nor drink. After some time this abstinence was found to be occasioned by the presence of a female, whom, at the king's desire, the captain had admitted to the dining party, and who appeared to be of superior rank to the king himself. As soon as this great personage had dined, she stepped up to the king, who put his hands to her feet, and then she retired. He immediately dipped his fingers in a glass of wine, and then received the obeisance of all her followers. This was the only instance observed of his paying such a mark of reverence to any person.

Poulaho introduced his son to the captain, a youth of about twelve years of age, named Futtafaithe; which appears to be the general name of the royal family. When dinner was served, the son, though present, was not allowed to sit down with his father. The king was very soon reconciled to the English manner of cookery; but his frequent dinners on board were probably more for the sake of what he had to drink, than for the food which he ate: he relished the wine, could drink his bottle as well as any man, and was as cheerful over it. On shore he entertained his visiters with a dance, and, to the surprise of every body, the unwieldy Poulaho endeavoured to vie with others in that active exercise.

Captain Cook, in consequence of an handsome present of the finer sort of cloth, and some other things, which he had received from the young prince, invited him, together with Mareewagee and his brother, an old chief named Toobou, who had been particularly attached to captain Furneaux on the former voyage, some other inferior chiefs, and two respectable old ladies of the first rank, on board his

ship. On this occasion, Mareewagee was dressed in a new piece of cloth, on the skirts of which were fixed pretty large patches of red feathers. This dress seemed to have been made on purpose for the visit; for, as soon as he got on board, he put it off, and presented it to the commander. When dinner was placed upon the table, not one of them would sit down, or eat a bit of any thing. On their entertainer expressing his surprise at this, they excused themselves, by saying that they were all taboo, which word has a very comprehensive meaning, but in general signifies that a thing is forbidden. Why they were laid under such restraints at that time was not explained. At another time, Feenou, and a young chief, were taken on board the Resolution to dinner, but when they saw the victuals, neither of them would taste any, saying that they were taboo avy. However, after enquiring how the victuals had been dressed, and having found that no ava (water) had been used in cooking a pig and some yams, they both sat down, and made a very hearty meal. Being assured, likewise, that there was no water in the wine, they drank it without scruple. From whence it was conjectured, that, on some account or other, they were then forbidden the use of water; or probably they did not like the water which the ship's companies made use of, it being taken out of some of their bathing places; a circumstance, which, one would think, should have excited a strong aversion to the use of it in dressing food, in every one whose imagination at all operated on his appetite. In a walk which captain Cook took with Omai, they fell in with half a dozen women in one place at supper, and observed that two of the company were fed by the others. On enquiring the reason for which, they

were told that these women were taboo mattee, which was afterwards more fully explained; for one of the women, two months before, had washed the dead body of a chief, on which account she was prohibited touching with her hands any food for five months; the other had performed the like office to the corpse of another person of inferior rank, which laid her under the like restriction for a shorter time.

The entertainments given to the natives of this island, were a repetition of such as had been performed at Hapaee, consisting in the various evolutions of the corps of marines, and in exhibitions of fireworks, the latter of which excited in these people the most rapturous delight; in return for which, a greater diversity of dances were performed by the Indians here than on the former island, together with feats of boxing and wrestling; in both which exercises, not only boys, but even little girls engaged, and boxed with great obstinacy. Some of the seamen entered the lists with the natives in both these trials of skill, but were generally worsted.

After captain Cook had fully supplied the ships with every necessary, and had repaired the sails, he waited ten days, to observe an eclipse of the sun; but it was very imperfectly viewed, owing to the micrometer belonging to the board of longitude being broken, and thereby rendered useless, and the weather proving foul and cloudy: but the disappointment was of little consequence, since the longitude of the place had been very fully determined by lunar observations. Captain Cook's departure from this island was still delayed four days longer, for the sake of being present at a public solemnity, which was called Natche, and was occasioned by the son of Poulaho being initiated into the order of

men, and acquiring certain privileges, among which, that of eating with his father was included. The custom which prevails at Otaheite, of the son succeeding to his father's dignity as soon as he is born, seems to be unknown on the Friendly Islands; nor does it appear that any ceremony, which bears the smallest similarity to this of the Natche, is observed either at the Society Islands or at Otaheite, as Omai would then have been able to have thrown some light upon the subject; but no information was obtained from him: all that we are told respecting this singular custom is what captain Cook was himself a witness of. The ceremonies performed on this occasion continued two days. Many scruples were expressed at the captain's attendance; but when they found that his curiosity was too strong to be restrained, they required of him that he should conform to the custom which the natives adhered to in their mode of dress; that he should be uncovered from the shoulders as low as the waist; that his hair should be loose and flowing over his shoulders; that he should sit cross-legged, and at certain times in the most humble posture, with down-cast eyes, and hands locked together: and, notwithstanding his strict conformity to this ritual, there were some rites performed on the second day, which they would on no account permit him to be present at, and of which they were extremely jealous lest he should gain a casual glance. It appears to have been a ceremonial of state and a solemn act of religion blended together; to have been allegorical, superstitious, and in many respects mere unmeaning childish pageantry, such as might be expected from the stagnant state of rationality among these people. The service began by a party of men chanting short sentences in

a mournful tone, during a procession in which 180 couple assisted, most of whom were men of rank, bearing long poles, at the end of which a yam was affixed, which they piled up before a morai, or burying-place, which is called in their country Fiatooka. This seemed something like an offering of the fruits of the earth to some divinity, or might signify nothing more than a tributary homage which the chiefs of the island paid to their prince; which latter interpretation is supported by the prince making a ceremonious repast on them the next day. This procession was followed by a long oration delivered by a respectable old man. Many women of the first rank assisted in some of the ceremonies, and were the only performers in others, among which was that of clothing the prince; which latter may bring to the mind of a learned reader, the idea of a Roman youth putting on the toga virilis, if the sex of the person performing the ceremony is overlooked. A venerable personage, whom captain Cook took for the chief priest of the island, sat on the right hand of the prince, and the king his father on the left. On the second day, a kind of offering was made, which consisted of fish in a number of baskets. These were emptied into two heaps, one on the right, the other on the left hand of the prince, in exact alternate order, by which a sanguine interpreter of allegoric mysteries would pronounce decisively, that these people meant to express alike their reverence for religion and government. Whilst this was doing, a sturdy fellow, who stood behind the rest, attempted to snatch away each fish as it was presented, and generally seized some small part, which he threw beside him. Having at length seized a whole one, a murmur of approbation from

the surrounding multitude was heard, and the man desisted from attacking the fish which were afterwards presented. To this succeeded wrestling and boxing matches. In the course of the two days ceremonies, many speeches were delivered by different orators, and with very different cadences. The whole seemed suited to that solemnity and gravity of character which particularly distinguish the natives of the Friendly Islands from the rest of the inhabitants of the South Sea districts. The morning of the first and afternoon of the second day, were employed in these public acts either of royalty or religion; at the conclusion of which, on a signal being given, the whole company started up, ran several paces to the left, and then sat down, with their backs to the prince, and the few that remained with him. In this ceremony captain Cook was a performer, who was desired not to look behind him: however, neither this injunction, nor the remembrance of Lot's wife, discouraged him from facing about; when he perceived that the prince had turned his back to the morai, and learned that he was at that time admitted to the high honour of eating with his father, which had never been permitted to him before; a piece of roasted yam being presented to each of them for that purpose; which probably was the cause that all the people turned their backs to them at that time, as they always do so when their monarch eats. Some of the chiefs afterwards acquainted captain Cook, that in about three months a far more important and grand solemnity would be performed on the same account, when not only the tribute of Tongataboo, but that of Hapaee and all the other islands, would be brought to the prince, and confirmed more awefully, by sacrificing ten

human victims from among the inferior order of the people. A horrid solemnity indeed! which is a most striking instance of the influence of gloomy and ignorant superstition over the minds of one of the most benevolent and humane nations upon earth." On enquiring into the reasons for so barbarous a practice, they only said, that it was a necessary part of the Natche, and that if they omitted it, the deity would certainly destroy their king.

When the captain had been nine days on the island, he made a distribution of the cattle which he intended to leave there, in hopes of stocking it with new species of quadrupeds, and furnishing the inhabitants with a greater variety and abundance of food. To Poulaho he gave a bull and a cow, with two or three goats; to Mareewagee, a Cape ram and two ewes; and to Feenou, a horse and mare: at the same time instructing Omai to tell them, that no such animals existed within several months sail of their island; that they had been brought with great difficulty and trouble, on purpose that they might become useful to them, and that therefore they ought to be careful not to kill any of them, till they had multiplied considerably; adding, that they and their posterity should remember they had received these valuable gifts from the natives of Britain. The Tongatabootians however appeared to set no value on the sheep; so that captain Cook, before his departure, ordered them to be taken back to the ship, as they were in great danger of being destroyed by dogs, the breed of which animal had greatly increased since the year 1773, when our navigator left some on the island.

On the 11th of July, 1777, captain Cook weighed anchor, and plied to the westward, stretching away

for Middleburg, or Evoa, as it is called by the inhabitants; another of the Friendly Islands, where he anchored at eight o'clock the next morning, on nearly the same spot which had been his station in the year 1773, and which he then named English Road. Here he put on shore the ram and two ewes of the Cape of Good Hope breed of sheep, which he had taken from Tongataboo; and, as no dogs were on this island, the prospect of stocking it with a breed of sheep was much more favourable than on the other spot. While surveying the delightful prospect, which the extensive plains and meadows on the north-western side of the island exhibited, he could not help flattering himself with the pleasing idea, that some future navigator would, from the same station, behold the country stocked with cattle, which were originally brought to these islands by the ships from England; and that the completion of this single benevolent purpose, independently of all other considerations, would sufficiently mark to posterity, that his voyages had not been useless to the general interests of humanity. Our commander planted a pine-apple, and sowed the seeds of melons and other fruits; and, as a reward for his former attentions in this way, a dish of turnips was served up at his table, which was the produce of the seeds left there on his last voyage.

Omai, as we have already observed, was a great favourite with Feenou, and, as he was caressed by the people in general, he became much inclined to stay and settle among them; to induce him to which, he was offered to be made the chief of this island: but captain Cook discountenanced it, not because he thought that Omai would do better for himself in his native island, but as he could, on no account,

fail of restoring him to that spot, now that he had brought him so near to it.

While on this island, an Indian sitting very unconcerned, and looking on amidst the crowd of people which surrounded the market-place on shore, was on a sudden attacked by three or four persons armed with clubs; with one blow they fractured his skull in a terrible manner, and with another broke his thigh; nor would they have stopped here, if the seamen had not interposed, though they left him without any signs of life. The cause of this violence was found to have arisen from the man having been discovered, in a situation rather indelicate, with a woman who was taboo'd, which signified, as was afterwards explained, that she belonged to another person, who was rather superior in rank to her gallant; from whence it appeared how these people treat such infidelities. The female offender only received a slight beating for her transgression. Notwithstanding this instance of cruel revenge, captain Cook describes the natives, as in their countenances very remarkably expressing that abundant mildness and good nature which they possess; and are entirely free from that savage keenness, which marks nations in a barbarous state. "One would, indeed," continues he, "be apt to fancy that they had been bred up under the severest restrictions, to acquire an aspect so settled, and such a command of their passions, as well as strictness in conduct: but they are at the same time frank, cheerful and good humoured, though sometimes in the presence of their chiefs, they put on a degree of gravity, and such a serious air as becomes stiff and awkward, and has an appearance of reserve."

These Indians understood barter, which they called

6279

fukkatou; "and perhaps," says captain Cook, "no nation in the world traffics with more honesty and less distrust. They might always be safely permitted to examine the goods on board the ships, and to hand them about one to another; and they put the same confidence in their guests; if either party repented of his bargain, the goods were re-exchanged with mutual consent and good humour. Upon the whole, they seemed possessed of many of the excellent qualities which adorn human nature, as industry, ingenuity, perseverance, affability, and perhaps other virtues, which no opportunity afforded of observing."—Notwithstanding this eulogium, captain Cook immediately adds, what it is rather difficult to reconcile with it, "that those of all ages, and of both sexes, were addicted to thieving to an uncommon degree: but, in their general intercourse with one another, there was no reason to think that thefts happen more frequently, perhaps less so, than in other countries, the dishonest practices of whose worthless individuals are not supposed to authorise any indiscriminate censure on the whole body of the people.—Great allowances should be made for the foibles of these poor Indians of the Pacific Ocean, whose minds were overpowered with the glare of objects equally new to them as they were captivating. Stealing, among the civilized nations of the world, may well be considered as denoting a character deeply stained with moral turpitude, with avarice unrestrained by the known rules of right, and with profligacy producing extreme indigence, and neglecting the allowable means of relieving it. But at the Friendly and other islands, the thefts so frequently committed by the natives, may be fairly traced to less culpable motives; they seemed to

arise solely from an intense curiosity, or desire to possess something which they had not been accustomed to before, and belonging to a sort of people so different from themselves."

There cannot be a stronger proof of the humanity of these people, than the concern they show for the dead. They have a common saying, "that their mourning is not in words but in deeds." The variety of painful and lacerating operations which they inflict upon themselves, on the death of their relations, conveys an idea of such rigorous discipline, as must require either an uncommon degree of affliction, or the grossest superstition to draw forth; but it is certain, that the latter has no small share in these acts of mortification. When any one labours under some grievous disease, and thinks himself in danger of dying, he cuts off one of his little fingers, and presents it as a sort of sacrifice to the deity, in hopes thereby of obtaining the recovery of his health. There was scarcely one in ten of them, who did not appear deprived of one or both of these fingers. Sometimes they cut so close, that they encroach upon the bone of the hand which joins to the amputated finger; and it is common for the lower class of people to cut off a joint of their little finger, on account of the sickness of the chiefs to whom they belong.

The men are all circumcised, or rather supercised, as the operation consists in cutting off a small piece of the fore-skin at the upper part, which by that means is rendered ever after incapable of covering the glands. This does not appear to be a religious rite, but to be practised from a principle of cleanliness. The king is neither circumcised nor punctured.

The ceremony of touching the king's foot, it

should seem, is what he cannot refuse to any of the people on the island, who choose to pay him that homage, which is called moe moea; for the common people frequently expressed their desire of doing it while he was walking, upon which he always stopped, and held up one of his feet behind him till they had performed the ceremony. The hand, after being thus applied, is held to be impure until washed, and must not touch any kind of food. This interdiction in a country, where water is scarce, would seem to be attended with some inconvenience; but the people are never at a loss for a succedaneum, and a piece of any juicy plant, which can with ease be procured on the spot, being rubbed on it, serves for the purpose of purification as well as washing with water. When the hands are in this state, they call it taboo rema; the latter of which is their word for hand. If the king should happen to go into a house belonging to a subject, that house would be taboo, and could never be inhabited more by the owners: so that wherever the king travels, there are particular houses for his reception.

Upon inquiring whether any account had been preserved among them of the arrival of Tasman's ships, it was found that his history had been handed down to the present race from their ancestors, with an accuracy which marks that oral tradition may sometimes be depended upon; for they described the two ships as resembling the Resolution and Discovery, their having stayed but a few days, and their removing from that station to Annamooka; and, by way of informing the inquirers how long ago this had happened, they mentioned the name of the Futtafaihe who was then king, and of those who had succeeded, down to Poulaho, who is the fifth since

that period, the first having been an old man at the time of the arrival of the ships. From which circumstance it appeared, that the order of succession to the crown had not been interrupted, and that the Futtafaihes, Poulaho being only an addition, to distinguish the king from the rest of his family, have reigned in a direct line for at least one hundred and thirty-five years.

Captain Cook departed from the Friendly Islands on the 17th of July, 1777, having continued at one or other of them between two and three months. In the night between the 20th and 21st, being then in the latitude of 22° 57′ south, an eclipse of the moon was observed. On the 8th of August a small inconsiderable island, about five or six miles in extent, was seen; but the ships being in no want of refreshments, it was not thought adviseable to explore it: two canoes, one carrying seven, and the other eight men, put off; they approached to within about pistol-shot of the Resolution, but could not be prevailed upon to go nearer. Their language was found to be the same as the Otaheitean, and Omai exerted all his eloquence to prevail upon them to venture on board. The name of the island, as given by these Indians, is Toobouai: it lies in 23° 25′ south latitude, and in 149° 23′ west longitude. Four days after passing this island, that of Otaheite appeared. At first the ships touched on the southern side, and continued there some days, but on the 24th of August they both came to an anchor in the well-known port of Matavia.

These people, though susceptible of strong impressions for the moment, appear incapable of any lasting attachments; they seemed scarcely to recognise Omai, the only one of their race who had

returned to those islands after having visited Europe. They showed no satisfaction at his arrival in safety, no curiosity to learn his adventures from his own mouth; nor was his consequence raised by his travels, although they entertained the most reverential sentiments of those superior beings with whom he had been associated. But what neither personal affection, curiosity, nor a propensity to admire, were capable of exciting, self-interest instantaneously effected: for, no sooner was it known that he possessed vast store of those commodities, which were most prized in that country, particularly red feathers, than the greatest chiefs, and even the king himself, were disposed to caress and admire him. It is not surprising, that a native of a country in which every individual remains immoveably fixed to that rank and station into which he happens to be born, should feel such a propensity to mix with those of his own level, as no vicissitudes of fortune, or accidental changes of situation, should be capable of abating. The propelling force of nature was still strong in Omai; and though, while he conversed with Europeans, it might not have been always conspicuous, it was not really repelled, and, to a nice observer, might be traced in his attachments and intimacies while in England; but when returned to a country so exact a transcript of his own, all his early prepossessions and habits recovered their former ascendency over him, he made no account of the elevation to which he had risen, and was eager to sink into his former condition. To gratify the wish of his heart, almost as soon as he went on shore he chanced to meet with one of his sisters, who had married during his absence; her husband found it much his interest to recommend himself to a rela-

tion, whom some of the greatest among Europeans had delighted to honour; and Omai, in gratifying his own humour, presently lost sight of his interest. Those rare and precious largesses, which he had received from his noble and generous patrons, with a design that he should, by a proper display and communication of them, procure to himself respect and consequence among the Indian chiefs, were lavished away upon a few insignificant individuals, who thus became possessed of valuables, which the greatest chiefs on the island could not obtain: he therefore presently dwindled into that insignificance, which seemed congenial to his character and disposition.

When the ships first arrived, the report soon spread over the country, that they had red feathers on board, which, of all others, is the commodity in greatest estimation among these Indians; and a number of canoes got along-side the ships the next morning, crowded with people, and bringing hogs and fruit. "At first," says captain Cook, "a quantity of feathers, not greater than what might be got from a tom-tit, would purchase a hog of forty or fifty pounds weight: but, as the whole ships crews were possessed of some of these precious articles, they fell in their value five hundred per cent. before night." From hence it should seem, that as great an attention was not paid at this time, to establish wholesome regulations with respect to barter, as had been shown on the first voyage: however, red feathers continued to preserve their superiority over every other commodity. Some of the natives would not part with an hog unless they received an axe in exchange; but nails, beads, and the catalogue of trinkets, which during the former voyages

had been the most highly prized, were now so much despised, that few would deign even to look at them.

It was soon learned that two ships, which afterward were found to be Spanish, and to have come from the port of Lima, had twice been here, and had anchored in a bay on the eastern side of the island, called by the natives Oheitepeha, since captain Cook's last visit in the year 1774, and had left some hogs, dogs, goats, a ram, and a very fine bull on the island. The females of the two latter species, doubtless, died on the voyage, and frustrated the design of spreading the breed. They had built a wooden house, with materials which they had brought ready prepared, as every plank was numbered. On their first visit, they left behind them two priests, a boy-servant, and another man, taking with them an equal number of the natives. After an absence of about ten months, as was conjectured, the same ships returned, and brought back two of the natives, the other two having died at Lima. Their stay on this second visit was but short: they took back their own people, but left the house standing, of which the natives had been so extremely careful, that they inclosed it with a shed, to preserve it from the weather. This house consisted of two small rooms, in the inner of which were a bedstead, a table, a bench, some old hats, and other trifles, of which the natives seemed to be no less careful than of the house itself.

There were scuttles all round this building, which served as air-holes; and perhaps they were also meant to fire from with muskets, if ever it should have been found necessary. At a little distance from the front stood a wooden cross, on the transverse part of which was cut the following inscription: "Christus vincit;" and on the perpendicular part,

"Carolus Tertius Imperat. 1774." On the other side of the post, captain Cook preserved the memory of the prior visits of the English, by inscribing, "Georgius Tertius Rex, Annis 1767, 1769, 1773, 1774, et 1777." The commodore died whilst the two ships lay in the bay, on their first arrival, and his grave was pointed out by the natives. Notwithstanding the residence of the priests, no lessons of religion were found, upon inquiry, to have been inculcated among them: perhaps the want of a common medium of language, and the palpable volatility of the national character, soon convinced the zealous fathers, that all such attempts would be utterly unavailing. However the Spaniards seemed to have taken great pains to ingratiate themselves with the natives, who, upon every occasion, mentioned them with expressions of the warmest esteem and veneration. Thus far the conduct of these voyagers appears to be highly respectable and meritorious; but a desire to exalt their own country in the estimation of these Indians, sunk themselves to the lowest pitch of degradation, by causing them to have recourse to the meanest and most contemptible falsehoods. One of the Spaniards, who was left on the island, was known to the natives by the name of Mateema. From the accounts which were given of him, he seems to have been a person who had studied the language of the country, and to have spoken it at least well enough to have been understood. He availed himself of these advantages, to impress upon the minds of the islanders the most exalted ideas of the greatness of the Spanish nation; the more fully to accomplish which, he endeavoured to make them think meanly of the English. He even went so far as to assure these people, that the

strangers, whom they had conceived so highly of, no longer existed as an independent nation; that Pretane (Great Britain) was only a small island, which they, the Spaniards, had utterly destroyed; and as for captain Cook, they had met him at sea, and with a few shot had sunk his ship, and every soul in her, to the bottom! For the credit of the priesthood we must add, that this deceiver was not of that fraternity, in whose breasts a spirit of detraction can surely never be cherished. No clear account could be obtained of the time when the Spaniards arrived, how long they stayed, and when they departed. "The more we inquired into this matter," says captain Cook, "the more we were convinced of the inability of most of these people to remember or note the time when past events happened, especially if it exceeded twenty or even ten months." It does not appear, from what has been said concerning the inhabitants of the Friendly Islands, that they resemble the Otaheiteans in this inattention to mark the precise period of time which has been distinguished by remarkable occurrences. It should seem, however, by the date of the inscription upon the cross, and from the information obtained from the most intelligent of the natives, that these two ships arrived in the year 1774, soon after the Resolution and Adventure left Matavai-bay, which was in May that year. One of the Indians, who accompanied the Spaniards to Lima, was seen, who spoke a few Spanish words very badly.

Poor Oberea, who had appeared with such eclat when this country was first visited, was now no more. The decline of her consequence was spoken of when the Endeavour touched here in the year 1769, and her fortunes appear to have become still

worse, when the Resolution arrived four years afterwards. But though she kept herself very private, yet her regard for a lieutenant on board the Resolution, who had been particularly noticed by her on the former voyage, induced her to pay him a visit then: but, alas! she appeared divested of all those insignia of greatness, which had once rendered her conspicuous in story, and august even in the eyes of Europeans. She complained to her favourite that she was teetee, (poor) and had not a hog to give her friends. Those on whom fortune frowns, seldom receive long visits; and poor Oberea would have been totally forgotten, if, on the return of the Resolution, in April the next year, the fame of the red feathers, which had been procured at the Friendly Islands, had not drawn her from her retreat, and urged her, poverty-stricken as she was, to pay a visit to her former intimates. Concluding that it was proper to renew her acquaintance with a gift, she found means to bring with her two hogs, which were presented to the captain. Even thus obscured, some vestiges of her former greatness remained. According to Mr. Forster, she yet retained "an eye to threaten and command," as well as a free and noble deportment. Her stay on board was but short, as her former consequence was vanished. Having made particular inquiries after her friends in the Endeavour, and received some presents of feathers, to procure which, she very frankly told them, was the object of her visit, she returned on shore in her canoe. To such an one, death must bring a welcome relief, when that which makes it life to live is lost.

On this island they met with the young man, whom captain Cook had taken with him from Uli-

etea, in the year 1773, and brought back the year following, after he had been on board the ship about seven months, and who was then called Oedidee or Mahine. The Admiralty Board had sent some clothes for his use, which, however, he declined wearing for a few days, preferring the garb of his own country: to this present the captain added a chest of tools, and a few other articles.

The live-stock destined for this island, in order to be fruitful, and by multiplying, to replenish it, were a peacock and hen, which the earl of Besborough had entrusted to the care of captain Cook, a gander and three geese, a drake and four ducks; the geese and ducks began to breed before the ships sailed. The gander which captain Wallis had given to Oberea ten years before, was still alive and in health. The hogs left on the island by the Spaniards were of a large kind, and had greatly improved the original breed; goats were also tolerably plentiful. The Spaniards had also brought two or three sorts of dogs, the multiplying of which was rather a nuisance than a benefit to the island. Captain Cook preferring the Spanish bull to that which he had brought, sent the three cows he had on board to him, in hopes of improving the breed. An English ram and ewe, and three Cape ewes, were put on shore; but what most of all delighted and astonished these people, was a horse and mare, which captain Cook and Clerke mounted, and rode upon round the plain of Matavai, to the very great surprise of a vast concourse of people, who attended on the occasion, gazing upon them with as much wonder as if they had been centaurs. The Indians were prodigiously struck with the use which was made of these animals; and the appearance of a man

mounted upon a horse, seemed to impress them with a more exalted idea of the greatness of other nations, than all the variety of novelties, which their European visitors had made them acquainted with. Both the horse and mare were in good condition, and looked extremely well. The trouble and vexation that attended bringing this living cargo thus far, is scarcely to be conceived; "but," says captain Cook, "the satisfaction which I felt, in having been so fortunate as to fulfil his majesty's humane design, in sending such valuable animals, satisfied me." The frequent visits which had been made to this island, seemed to have created a persuasion among the natives, that the intercourse would be kept up. Otoo, the king, therefore, strictly enjoined captain Cook to request, in his name, the earee rahie no Prétane (king of Great Britain) to send him, by the next ships, red feathers, and the birds that produce them, axes, half a dozen muskets, with powder and shot, and, by no means, to forget horses. He requested the captain to take home with him a small juvahah, or war-canoe, about sixteen feet long, as the only present which he could send, worthy his majesty's acceptance. It was double, and seemed to have been built for the purpose; but, as it was too large to be taken on board, this well-meant intention was frustrated.

Otoo introduced captain Cook to his father, where he found some people employed in dressing two girls with a prodigious quantity of fine cloth, after a very singular fashion. The one end of each piece of cloth, of which there were a good many, was held over the heads of the girls, whilst the remainder was wrapped round their bodies, under the armpits. Then the upper ends were let fall, and hung

down in folds to the ground, over the other, so as to bear some resemblance to a circular hoop petticoat. Afterwards, round the outside of all, were wrapped several pieces of different-coloured cloth, which considerably increased the size, so that it was no less than five or six yards in circuit; and the weight of this singular attire was as much as the poor girls could support. To each were hung two taames, or breast-plates, by way of enriching the whole, and giving it a picturesque appearance. Thus equipped, they were conducted on board the ship, together with several hogs, and a quantity of fruit, which, with the cloth, was a present to captain Cook from Otoo's father.

During the whole time that the ships continued at this island, the friendly intercourse with the natives was never once suspended by any untoward accident, nor was there a theft committed which deserves to be mentioned. Unacquainted as these Indians are with the refinements of polished nations, their king, in one instance, discovered a knowledge in the mode of levying taxes, which might vie with the address in ways and means of an European financier. He caused a little house or two to be erected near the post on shore, where some of his people constantly kept watch, guarding their visitors at night from thieves, and every morning collecting contributions from such girls as had private intercourse with the seamen; so that a source of revenue was drawn from this connexion. Whilst the ships continued here, an opportunity occurred of observing the state of parties at that time. The neighbouring island of Eimeo, which was in some measure subordinate, had received a supreme governor, or a king, from Otaheite, who, by the intrigues

of Maheine, a great lord of Eimeo, was murdered, and the regal dignity assumed by the murderer. As this had happened about the time of the arrival of captain Cook, an assembly of the chiefs of Otaheite was soon after convened, to deliberate on the measures to be taken in consequence of this regicide and usurpation. At this meeting our commander was present. The subject of debate was, whether war should be waged against Eimeo. At first the proceedings were very orderly, and only one person spoke at a time; but a difference of opinion prevailing, the parties grew warm, and the captain expected that the meeting would have terminated in the same manner as is common at a Polish diet: but the contending great men cooled as fast as they had heated, and order was restored. War was at length determined upon, but whether by a majority of votes, or by what other decision, we are not told. It should seem, that in this assembly the king makes no very conspicuous figure, and that the power is vested in the body of the chiefs. Application was immediately made to our commander, soliciting him to join his force to that of the island; but he declined being anywise a party, saying, that he was unacquainted with the merits of the dispute; and, as the people of Eimeo had never offended him, he could not think of committing hostilities against them. Towha, a relation of Otoo, was generalissimo of the forces, and commander of the fleet to be sent against Eimeo; and no sooner was war determined upon, than he killed a man of the lowest class of the people, to be sacrificed to the Eatooa, or tutelar divinity of the island, whose name, they said, was Oroo, to implore his assistance against the enemy. M. de Bougainville, on the

authority of Autorou, had asserted, that the offering of human sacrifices was a religious institution of this island, and the fact was now fully proved. Captain Cook, Mr. Anderson and Mr. Webber, obtained the ready assent of Otoo to be present; who only requested that the seamen might be kept at a distance; so that nothing of the scrupulosity which prevailed at Tongataboo, in admitting strangers to be witnesses of their rites, was discovered on this occasion. A chief priest, and three who appeared to be of inferior order, with some attendants or assistants, officiated at this solemnity, but not a woman was seen among the spectators. As in the ceremonies at Tongataboo, so here, the king appeared to be at least as much the object addressed as the divinity. This solemnity is called Poore Earee, or chief's prayer; and the victim who is offered up, Taata taboo, or consecrated man. It is held to be an essential ceremony, whenever a poor wretch is sacrificed, for the chief priest (who appears without his habit of ceremony on this occasion) to take out the left eye, which he presents to the king, holding it to his mouth, which he desires him to open: but, instead of putting it in, he immediately withdraws it. This they call "eating the man, or food for the chief: and perhaps," says captain Cook, "we may observe here some traces of former times, when the dead body was really feasted upon." Some hair is likewise pulled off the head of the sacrifice, and being wrapped up in a green leaf, is presented to the king. During some part of the ceremonies, a king-fisher making a noise in the trees, Otoo turned to captain Cook, saying that it was the Eatoo, and seemed to consider it as a good omen. After several ceremonies performed over the dead body, it

was at length buried in a hole dug for the purpose; and a lean half-starved dog was afterwards killed, by twisting his neck, and suffocating him. Then succeeded many mysterious rites with the entrails, the heart, liver and kidneys. The next day other ceremonies were performed; and a pig was sacrificed, cleaned, and the entrails taken out. These happened to have a considerable share of those convulsive motions, which often appear in different parts after an animal is killed; and this was considered by the spectators as a very favourable omen to the expedition, on account of which the sacrifices had been offered. And here we cannot but admire the striking similarity in the effects of superstition on the human mind, in every period of time and in every country. Auguring from the flight and cry of birds was held in high veneration among the Greeks and Romans; and to decide upon the event of an enterprize, by consulting the entrails of a beast sacrificed, was the constant practice in times of remote antiquity: nor was any important undertaking ever entered upon, until the people were first led to believe that the Gods were propitious, by the favourable report of the soothsayers on inspecting the victims.

The practice of offering human sacrifices is very general upon the South Sea Islands: there could be no doubt of its prevailing on the Friendly Islands, and it will soon be found to make a part of the superstition of the Sandwich Islands. At Otaheite, there is the greatest reason to think that this horrid rite is frequently performed; for, on a platform adjoining to the Morai, which was the scene of these ceremonies, captain Cook counted forty-nine skulls of former victims; and, as none of them had suf-

fered any considerable change from the weather, it may be inferred that no great length of time had elapsed since they had been offered upon this altar of blood.

In the year 1774, the Otaheiteans carried on a war against the little island of Eimeo; but the cause of the difference which then arose, could not be distinctly known. At this time three parties divided the people of Otaheite; one was strenuous for carrying on the war; another no ways interfered in it; and a third openly declared themselves friends to Maheine. At the head of the first was Towha; but, strange as it may appear, Otoo countenanced the last. Captain Cook concluding, from the dissensions and disunion which prevailed, that the expedition would prove unsuccessful, ventured to predict to Towha, that such would be the termination of it; and before the ships quitted the island, he was found to have been in the right. The men of Eimeo received the invaders with great firmness, killed many of their chiefs, among whom was Toubouraitamaide, who was much spoken of in captain Cook's first voyage. Towha remonstrated in vain to Otoo for a reinforcement, so that the armament was soon obliged to return home disgraced and discomfited.

On the 27th of September the two ships quitted the island, and touched no more there during the voyage. The commander paid a short visit to the neighbouring island of Eimeo, and became acquainted with the ambitious chief who had acquired the government of it. Here he found an excellent harbour, where he remained a few days longer than he intended, on account of the natives having stolen two of his goats, which no remonstrances could obtain the restitution of. When Omai was consulted

what method should be adopted to recover them, he advised that the captain should go with a party of men into the country, and shoot every soul he should meet with: from whence it should seem, that these islanders have no more tenderness for the lives of their fellow-Indians, inhabiting a different spot from themselves, and are no less sanguinary in their mode of chastising a transgression, than the most unfeeling sailor on board an European ship. However, a more humane, but an equally decisive method was adopted: the commander caused some of their houses to be set on fire, and destroyed several of their canoes. After two days spent in such acts of hostility, the secreted animals were restored, but not until more loss and injury had been sustained by the natives, than the descent of Towha's forces had occasioned.

It had been the intention of captain Cook to settle Omai at the island of Ulietea, where he had been possessed of some land, which he had lost by the Bolabolan invasion; but it was not doubted that the weight and consequence which his friends possessed, would have procured him a restitution of this, his patrimonial inheritance. Omai, however, was too much of a patriot to compromise matters with the invaders of his country, and expected to be put into possession by force of arms; and, as he could not be prevailed upon to renounce that idea, the captain gave up the thought of settling him at Ulietea, and fixed upon Huaheine as the proper place, where he arrived on the 12th of October. On landing, Omai made an offering to the Eatooa, as Tupia had before done; and a set speech was delivered by one of his friends, which was dictated by him. In this prayer, he did not forget his friends

in England, nor those who had brought him safe back, the earee rahie no Pretane, the earl of Sandwich, Toote, (Cook) Tatee, (Clerke) were distinctly mentioned. After this ceremony was performed, our navigator introduced the business of settling Omai on that island, and the chiefs readily consented to allot him a piece of ground on the shore, near the harbour, the extent of which was about two hundred yards, and somewhat more in depth. The carpenters were then set to work to build him a small house, in which he might secure the European commodities which were his property; and some hands were employed in making a garden for his use, planting vines, shaddocks, pine-apples, melons, and the seeds of several other vegetable articles, all of which his friends had the pleasure to observe in a flourishing state before they left the island. He now began to see the folly of his conduct at Otaheite, and to assume a prudent circumspection. He found here a brother, sister, and a brother-in-law. No sooner did Omai become a domestic man, than he conceived a disinclination for all the European table and kitchen conveniences, and parted with them to those on board the ships, receiving in exchange hatchets and other iron implements, which had a more intrinsic value in this part of the world. A horse and mare were left with Omai, and a goat big with kid; he received also a boar and two sows of the English breed from captain Cook, and had one or two of his own. He had for or five toutous, or slaves, whom he brought from Otaheite; the two New Zealand youths remained with him, and his brother with some others joined him; so that his family consisted of eight or ten persons, to which not a single female as yet

belonged. The house was twenty-four feet by eighteen, and ten feet high. It was composed of boards, the spoils of the military operations at Eimeo; and in building it, as few nails as posssible were used, that there might be no inducement, from the love of iron, to pull it down. Captain Cook caused the following inscription to be cut upon the outside of this edifice:

Georgius Tertius Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.
Naves { Resolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.
Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

The European weapons in possession of Omai were, a musket, bayonet and cartouch-box; a fowling piece, two pairs of pistols, and two or three swords or cutlasses. Revenge, rather than a desire of becoming great, appeared to actuate Omai. What might greatly contribute to inflame this passion was, that he had been formerly taken prisoner by those people, and carried to that island; where he and some others would have been put to death the next day, if they had not found means to make their escape in the night. Throughout the voyage, he declared himself resolved to dispossess the conquerors of Ulietea; and so infatuatedly attached was he to this his favourite scheme, as to profess to believe that the conquerors would quit their conquest as soon as they should hear of his arrival at Otaheite. As he advanced on the voyage, however, his romantic notions appeared to abate; and when at the Friendly Islands, he began to entertain doubts concerning the reception which he should meet with among his countrymen, and became well disposed to take up his residence at Tongataboo.

But, to the very last, he continued determined to take the earliest opportunity that offered of satisfying his revenge in battle. To this captain Cook supposes he was not a little spurred by the coat of mail he brought from England, clothed in which, and in possession of some fire-arms, he fancied that he should be invincible. Omai's return, and the substantial proofs which he brought with him of the liberality of his friends in England, induced many to solicit very strenuously to accompany our commander to Pretane; but he peremptorily rejected all such applications; and Omai, who was very ambitious of remaining the only great traveller, being afraid lest some other might be put in a situation of rivalling him, frequently reminded the captain, that lord Sandwich had told him none other of his countrymen were to come to England.

On quitting Huaheine, the ships proceeded to the island of Ulietea, where they came to an anchor on the 3d of November. Whilst here, a marine deserted, carrying with him his musket and accoutrements, being desirous to exchange the turbulence of a seafaring life, for the revelry and ease to be enjoyed on this benign spot: but after much search, he was at length traced to his retreat, and surprised sitting between two women. It is hard to say whether this poor fellow, had he succeeded in his attempt, would not soon have repented of the choice which he had made. Long accustomed to an active life, the insipid uniformity of that for which he had changed it, would probably have become intolerable: he would soon have felt that the manners of these people were entirely different from those to which he had ever been habituated, though that novelty might at first be gratifying; and the want

of a common language, by which to convey reciprocal ideas, would have diffused languor and insipidity over every scene. But to a man harrassed by the severe hardships incidental to sea-service, intent on procuring a cessation from them, and under the fascinating power of woman, these considerations could not present themselves; but they would most probably have struck him very forcibly after a short possession of the paradise he had pictured to himself; and he would then have pined for the varied life of activity, which he had irrecoverably renounced. These are at least probable conjectures; and perhaps no good reason can be assigned why an European should assimilate to the manners of Indians, any more than that an Indian should conceive a lasting relish for an European way of life; and that the latter is not disposed to do this, is proved by many striking and well-known examples, as well as by the conduct of Omai on this voyage. But it must be owned that there is something to gratify pride in the one case, if that were sufficient for all the purposes of enjoyment: an European among Indians is looked up to with admiration by every one, whereas an Indian among Europeans feels his inferiority, and aspires to regain his wonted level. A midshipman and seaman from the Discovery likewise deserted, but were recovered with much difficulty.

Before the ships quitted Ulietea, the captain had the satisfaction to receive a message from Omai, informing him that he remained undisturbed by the people of the island; which was the last information obtained from this travelled Indian, who had made the circuit of the globe, in going out and returning home; for captain Furneaux brought him

to Europe by an eastern course, and captain Cook, in taking him back, likewise sailed eastward from the Cape of Good Hope.

The stock of iron on board the ships was by this time much reduced; it was therefore a welcome piece of information, to be told that an anchor, which M. de Bougainville had lost in the harbour where he lay at Otaheite, had been taken up by the natives, and sent as a present to Opooney, the king of Bolabola. Our commander, therefore, proceeded to that island, and procured what to the Indians was an unwieldy useless curiosity, by presenting the king with a linen night-gown, a shirt, some gauze handkerchiefs, a looking-glass, some beads, with other toys, and six axes. The anchor, however, turned out to be neither so large nor so perfect as was expected; but it was worked up into a fresh assortment of trading articles, to serve on the northern expedition.

On the 8th of December, 1777, captain Cook bade an eternal farewel to the Society Islands, and steered to the northward, not meeting with any thing that indicated the vicinity of land, till the ships came to about the latitude of 8 degrees south, where birds were seen; at which time the longitude was 155 degrees west. On the night between the 22d and 23d, the ships crossed the line, and the day following land was discovered. It proved a low island, or narrow bank of land, enclosing the sea within, uninhabited, and without fresh water: great quantities of fish and abundance of very fine turtle, of the green kind, weighing about ninety or one hundred pounds, and perhaps as good as any in the world, were caught here. On this spot they kept their Christmas, from which circumstance it

received the name of Christmas Island. It is about fifteen or twenty leagues in circumference, of a semicircular form, or like the moon in the last quarter; the two horns being the north and south points. From observations which captain Cook, Mr. King and Mr. Bayly made upon an eclipse of the sun, on the 30th of December, it was found to lie in latitude 1° 59′ N. longitude 157° 30′ W.

While the ships continued here, two seamen belonging to the Discovery straggling up the country lost their way, and parting soon after, one regained the ship after having been absent twenty-four hours, during which time he had not been able to procure a drop of water or a single cocoa-nut; so that, to allay thirst, his hard necessity suggested to him the expedient of killing turtle, and drinking their blood. The other seaman was longer missing: a party sent out on purpose to find him, at length brought him back. This poor fellow must have suffered far greater distress than the other, not only as having been lost a longer time, but it proved that he was too squeamish to drink turtles blood. "The turtle and fish caught here," says Ellis, "proved a welcome supply, for our stock of fresh provisions had been consumed a few days before our discovery of this island."

The soil here, in some places, is light and black, evidently composed of decayed vegetables, the dung of birds, and sand. "There are other places," says captain Cook, "where nothing but marine productions, such as broken coral, stones and shells, are deposited in long narrow ridges, lying in a parallel direction with the sea-coast, not unlike a ploughed field, and must have been thrown up by the waves, though, at this time, they do not reach within a

mile of some of these places. This seems to furnish an incontestable proof, that the island has been produced by accessions from the sea, and is in a state of increase; for not only the broken pieces of coral, but many of the shells are too heavy and large, to have been brought by any birds from the beach, to the places where they now lie." As there were some cocoa-nuts and yams on board the Resolution, in a state of vegetation, the commander ordered them to be planted on the island, and some melon-seeds to be sown.

On the 2d of January, 1778, the two ships weighed anchor, and resumed their course to the northward, with fine weather, and a gentle breeze at east and east-south-east. When in 7° 45′ north latitude, they saw birds every day; and between the latitude of 10 and 11 degrees, several turtles were seen; notwithstanding which signs of being in the neighbourhood of land, none appeared until the 18th at day-break, being in 21° 12′ north latitude, and 159° 19′ west longitude. The wind would not permit their making for that land; but more appearing to the northward, they stretched away for that. On the approach of the ships, some canoes put off from the shore, and it was no small satisfaction to find that the people in them spoke the Otaheitean language. They were of a brown colour, of the common size, and stoutly made. The hair of most of them was cropped pretty short, others had it flowing loose, and with a few it was tied in a bunch on the crown of the head: in all it seemed to be naturally black, but most of them had stained it, as is the practice of the Friendly islanders, with some stuff which gave it a brown or burned colour. In general they wore their beards. They had no ornament about

their persons, nor was it observed that their ears were perforated; but some were punctured on the hands, or near the groin, though in a small degree. On a neighbouring island one man was seen, who had the figure of a lizard punctured on his breast, and upon the breasts of others were the figures of men badly imitated. The bits of cloth which they wore were curiously stained with red, black and white colours. They seemed very mild, and had no arms of any kind except some small stones, which they had evidently brought for their own defence; and these they threw overboard when they found they were not wanted. Several small pigs were purchased for a sixpenny nail; so that our navigators again found themselves in a land of plenty, and their stock of turtle was at that time nearly expended. On the third day the natives began to take courage, and ventured on board the ships. "In the course of my several voyages," says captain Cook, "I never before met with the natives of any place so much astonished as these people were, upon entering the ship: their eyes were continually flying from object to object. The wildness of their looks and gestures fully expressed their entire ignorance about every thing they saw, and strongly proved that, till then they had never been visited by Europeans, nor acquainted with any other articles of traffic except iron, which they asked for by the name of hamaite, probably referring to some instrument, in the making of which iron could be usefully employed. For the same reason they frequently called iron by the name of toe, which in their language signifies a hatchet, or rather a kind of adze."

Captain Cook took every possible precaution in order to prevent the introduction of a fatal disease

into the island, as he knew some of the seamen were at that time infected with it, and by them it had been unfortunately communicated to other islands in those seas; he therefore strictly enjoined, that no person known to be capable of propagating the infection should be sent upon duty out of the ships: but it appeared, when the ships again visited this spot a twelvemonth afterwards, that all these attentions had not been effectual to prevent the admission of this dreadful evil; on which occasion he expresses himself thus: "I had been equally attentive to the same object when I first visited the Friendly Islands, yet I afterwards found, with real concern, that I had not succeeded; and I am very much afraid that this will always be the case in such voyages as ours, whenever it is necessary to have a number of people on shore: the opportunities and inducements to an intercourse between the sexes are then too numerous to be guarded against; and, however confident we may be of the health of our men, we are often undeceived too late. It is even a matter of doubt with me, if it be always in the power of the most skilful of the faculty to pronounce, with any certainty, whether a person, who has been under their care, in certain stages of this malady, is so effectually cured as to leave no possibility of his being still capable of communicating the taint. It is likewise well known, that among a number of men, there are generally to be found some so bashful as to endeavour to conceal their labouring under any symptoms of this disorder; and there are others again so profligate, as not to care to whom they communicate it. Of this we had an instance at Tongataboo, in the gunner of the Discovery, who had been stationed ashore to manage the trade for

that ship. After he knew that he had contracted this disease, he continued to have connections with different women, who were supposed not to have already contracted it: his companions expostulated with him ineffectually; but captain Clerke hearing of this dangerous irregularity of conduct, ordered him on board."

The propensity of these people to seize upon every thing within their reach, obliged a lieutenant, who commanded a party of men on shore, to fire among a number of them, by which one man was killed; and this appears to have been the first instance of an Indian losing his life, which occurs in this voyage.

Before they had been five days on this island, which was called by the natives Atooi, they had an opportunity of being fully assured, that the practice of eating the flesh of their enemies slain in battle, prevailed here; and a small wooden instrument beset with shark's teeth, and greatly resembling the saw or knife used by the New Zealanders to dissect the bodies of their enemies, was purchased here; and the natives, without any scruple, informed those, who inquired about the use made of it, that with it they cut out the fleshy part of the belly, when any person was killed: on which subject captain Cook exclaims; "I am sorry to say, that I cannot see the least reason to hesitate in pronouncing it to be certain, that the horrid banquet of human flesh is as much relished here, amidst plenty, as it is in New Zealand."

After staying a few days at Atooi, the ships proceeded to a neighbouring island called Oneeheow. The men, who came off in canoes, brought several women with them, who remained alongside the

ships, behaving with far less modesty than the females of Atooi, and at times all joined in a song, not remarkable for its melody, though performed in very exact concert, by beating time upon their breasts with their hands. The men who came on board did not stay long, and, before they departed, some of them requested permission to lay down on the deck locks of their hair. On this island some salt was procured, which was a very valuable acquisition; but the surf was so great, that most of it was lost in conveying it on board. An officer and twenty men, deterred by the danger of coming off, would not venture through it; but though the ship's boats could not stem it, the natives were not hindered from coming off from the shore in their canoes. A particular veneration seemed to be paid here to owls, which bird they had very tame. It was observed to be a pretty general practice among these Indians, to pull out one of their teeth. On this island were left a goat, a ram and two ewes, a boar and sow pig of the English breed; the seeds of melons, pumkins and onions, were likewise sown.

The general appearance of the land does not, in the least, resemble any of the islands which had been visited within the tropic, on the south side of the equator, if we except its hills near the centre, which are high, but slope gently to the sea, or lower lands. Though it be destitute of the delightful borders of Otaheite, and of the luxuriant plains of Tongataboo covered with trees, which at once afford a friendly shelter from the scorching sun, an enchanting prospect to the eye, and food for the inhabitants, which may be truly said to drop from the trees into their mouths, without the laborious task of rearing; though Atooi is destitute of these

advantages, its possessing a greater quantity of gently rising land, renders it, in some measure, superior to the above favourite islands, as being more capable of improvement. The animals here consist of hogs and dogs. Notwithstanding these people appear to be well skilled in agriculture, yet the general appearance of the island showed that it was capable of much more extensive cultivation, and of maintaining at least three times the number of the inhabitants that were then upon it.

Although these islands lie within the tropic of Cancer, yet all the habitations are perfectly close quite round: they are thatched with long grass, which is laid on slender poles, disposed with some regularity. The figure of these houses is not unlike oblong corn or hay-stacks; or a better idea may perhaps be formed, by supposing the roof of a barn placed on the ground, in such a manner as to form a high acute ridge, with two very low sides, hardly discernible at a distance. The entrance is made indifferently at the end or side, and is an oblong hole, so low that one must rather creep than walk in, and is often shut up by planks fastened together, which serve as a door, but having no hinges, must be removed occasionally. No light enters the house but by this opening. These dwellings, so uncomfortable in a warm climate, are kept remarkably clean; on the floors are spread mats to sit or sleep upon.

From the many weapons which these islanders were possessed of, and from the excellent condition in which they kept them, it was inferred that wars were frequent here; and the information obtained from the natives proved, that even different districts of the same island were accustomed to wage

war with each other, as well as one island against another; which fully accounted for the disproportion between the number of inhabitants and the extent of ground capable of cultivation. But notwithstanding the state of hostility in which these people live, there is no appearance of defence or fortification near any of their villages; and the houses are scattered about without any order, either with respect to their distances from each other, or their position in any particular direction.

As these people do not anoint their bodies, which is the general practice of the southern islanders, their skin is neither soft nor shining. But few instances of corpulency were seen, and these oftener among the women than the men. It was pleasing to see with how much affection mothers treated their infants, and how readily the men lent their assistance to such an affectionate office; thus honourably distinguishing themselves from those savages, who esteem a wife and child as things rather necessary than desirable, or worthy of their notice. These people are vigorous, active, and most expert swimmers: they will leave their canoes upon the most trifling occasion, dive under them, and swim to others, though at a great distance. It was very common to see women, with infants at their breasts, when the surf was so high that they could not land in a canoe, leap over board, and, without endangering their little ones, swim to the shore through a sea that looked dreadful. To such amphibious creatures no great mischief can arise from a small canoe being run down by a larger; and to this mischance they are continually exposed: for the contempt in which the lower class of people are held by the chiefs, is equally conspicuous here as at the

southern islands; and one of the chiefs coming off in a double canoe, to pay a visit to captain Clerke on board the Discovery, showed no regard to the small canoes which happened to be in his way, but ran against or over them without the least concern. Nor was it possible for these poor people to avoid him, as they could not manage their canoes, it being a necessary mark of their submission, that they should lie down till he had passed. There were some peculiarities in the behaviour of this chief, which deserve to be noticed. When he entered the ship, his attendants stood round him, holding each other by the hands; nor would they suffer any one to come near him but captain Clerke himself. He was a young man, clothed from head to foot, and accompanied by a young woman, who was supposed to be his wife. His name was said to be Tamahano. Captain Clerke could not prevail upon this great man to go below, nor to move from the place where his attendants had first fixed him. After staying some time in the ship, he was again carried into his canoe, and returned to the island, receiving the same honours from all the natives as when he came on board.

The islands in the Pacific Ocean, which modern navigators have added to the geography of the globe, have been generally found lying in groups or clusters; the single intermediate islands, as yet discovered, being few in proportion to the others, though probably there may be many more still unknown, which serve as steps between the clusters. Of the archipelago which captain Cook now fell in with, we shall have occasion to say more hereafter; at present it is only necessary to add, that the whole group received the name of the Sandwich

Islands, in honour of earl Sandwich. The natives of these islands appeared to be blessed with a frank, cheerful disposition; "and," says our author, "were I to draw any comparisons, I should say, that they are equally free from the fickle levity which distinguishes the natives of Otaheite, and the sedate cast observed among many of those of Tongataboo. Except their propensity to thieving, which seems innate to most of the people inhabiting on this ocean, they were exceedingly friendly to their visitors; and it does their sensibility no little credit, without flattering ourselves, that when they saw the various articles of our European manufactures, they could not help expressing their surprise, by a mixture of joy and concern, that seemed to apply the case as a lesson of humility to themselves; and on all occasions they appeared to be deeply impressed with a consciousness of their own inferiority. A behaviour which equally exempts their national character from the preposterous pride of the more polished Japanese, and of the ruder Greenlander." Notwithstanding this humble estimation of themselves, these people discover an uncommon degree of neatness and ingenuity in all their manufactures. They make their cloth in the same manner as the natives of the southern islands; but in colouring or staining it, they display a superiority of taste, by the endless variety of figures which they execute. One would suppose, on seeing a number of these pieces, that they had borrowed their patterns from some mercer's shop, in which the most elegant productions of China and Europe were collected. Their colours, indeed, except the red, are not very bright; but the regularity of the figures and stripes is truly surprising. They seemed to possess the art of var-

nishing; for some of their stained gourd-shells are covered with a kind of lacker. Their wooden dishes or bowls, out of which they drink their ava, are out of the etooa-tree or cordia, as neat as if made in our turning-lathe, and perhaps better polished.

The only iron tools, or rather bits of iron, seen among them, and which they had before the arrival of the two ships, were a piece of iron hoop, about two inches long, fitted into a wooden handle; this captain Cook purchased: but he does not admit it to be a proof of any European ship having touched there previous to his arrival, and enters fully into the discussion of that point.

The taboo prevails in Atooi in its full extent, and apparently with much more rigour than at Tongataboo; for the people here always asked with great eagerness, and signs of fear to offend, whether any particular thing which they desired to see, or those on board the ships were unwilling to show, was taboo, or as they pronounced the word, tafoo? The maia rae, or forbidden articles at the Society Islands, though doubtless the same thing, did not seem to be so strictly observed by them, except with respect to the dead, about whom they were thought to be more superstitious than any of the others were.

CHAP. II.

Captain Cook's attempt to discover a northern passage; his return to winter at the Sandwich Islands, and tragical death.

ON the second of February 1778, our navigator quitted the harbour of Oneehow, which lies in lat. 21°56′ N. long. 159°47′ W. and stood away to the northward with a gentle gale from the east. On

the 7th, in the lat. of 29° N. long. 160° W. the wind veered to the south-east, which enabled the ships to steer N. E. and E. which course was continued to the 12th. In the lat. of 30° N. although it was the winter season, they only then began to feel a sensation of cold in the mornings and evenings. "This," says captain Cook, "is a sign of the equal and lasting influence of the sun's heat, at all seasons, to thirty degrees on each side the line: the disproportion is known to become very great after that. This must be attributed almost entirely to the direction of the rays of the sun, independent of the bare distance, which is by no means equal to the effect." On the 19th, being in lat. 37° N. the wind veered to the S. E. and enabled our navigator again to steer to the east, inclining to the north. On the 25th, they reached the lat. of 42° 30′ and long. 141° W., when they began to meet with the rock weed, mentioned by the writer of lord Anson's voyage, under the name of sea leek, which the Manilla ships generally fall in with. On the 1st of March, the latitude being 44° 49′ N. long. 132° W. captain Cook stood to the east, close hauled, in order to make the land: the weather was still moderate and mild, although so far to the northward, and near the coast of an extensive continent; from which our author concludes, that the season must be uncommonly mild, or it must be quite inexplicable how it happened, that Sir Francis Drake should have met with such severe cold about this latitude, in the month of June. Another singular circumstance, noticed by our voyager, was, that few birds were seen here, in comparison with what were met with to the south of the line, in the same latitudes; and he observes, that this must either

proceed from a scarcity of the different sorts, or from a deficiency of places for them to rest upon. From whence he concludes, that beyond 40 degrees in the southern hemisphere, the species are much more numerous, and the isles where they inhabit also more plentifully scattered about, than any where between the coast of California and Japan, in or near that latitude. During a calm, on the morning of the 2d of March, some parts of the sea seemed covered with a sort of slime, and some small sea-animals were swimming about it, the most conspicuous of which were of the gelatinous or medusa kind, almost globular; and another smaller, that had a white or shining appearance, and were very numerous. Some of these last were taken up, and put into a glass cup, with some salt water, in which they appeared like small scales or bits of silver, when at rest, in a prone situation. When they began to swim about, which they did with equal ease upon their back, sides, or belly, they emitted the brightest colours of the most precious gems, according to their position with respect to the light. Sometimes they appeared quite pellucid; at other times assuming various tints of blue, from a pale sappharine to a deep violet colour, which were frequently mixed with a ruby or opaline redness, and glowed with a strength sufficient to illuminate the vessel and water. These colours appeared most vivid when the glass was held to a strong light, and mostly vanished on the subsiding of the animals to the bottom, when they acquired a brownish cast; but with candle-light, the colour was chiefly a beautiful pale green, tinged with a burnished gloss; and in the dark it had a faint appearance of glowing fire. They proved to be a species of the

oniscus; and, from their properties, were, by Mr. Anderson, called oniscus fulgens, being probably an animal which has a share in producing some sorts of that lucid appearance often observed near ships at sea, in the night. On the 6th, seals and several whales were seen; and at day-break, the next morning, the long-looked for coast of New Albion (so named by Sir Francis Drake) appeared, distant ten or twelve leagues: at noon the lat. was 44° 33′, long. 144° 40′ W. At the northern extremity the land formed a point, which captain Cook called Cape Foulweather, from the very bad weather which was soon after met with.

The appearance of the country on the coast, though it might make an agreeable summer prospect, was, at that time, very uncomfortable, as the bare grounds towards the coast were all covered with snow, which seemed to be of a considerable depth between the little hills and rising grounds, and in several places, towards the sea, might easily have been mistaken, at a distance, for white cliffs. A projecting point of land, which captain Cook named Cape Gregory, lies nearly in the situation of Cape Blanco, seen by Martin d'Aguilar, on the 19th of January, 1603.

On the 11th of March, at midnight, the wind shifted to W.N.W. and soon increased to a very hard gale, which obliged our commander to stretch to the southward, in order to get clear of the coast. This gale continued till eight o'clock in the morning of the 13th, when it abating, he again stood in for the land, having been forced a considerable way backward, for, at the time when he tacked, he was in lat. 42° 45′ N. long. 136° 30′ W. The wind continued at W. and N.W. storms, moderate

weather, and calms, succeeding each other by turns, until the morning of the 21st, when, after a few hours calm, a breeze sprung up at S. W. This bringing with it fair weather, our navigator stretched north-eastwardly, in order to fall in with the land, beyond that part of it where he had been so unprofitably tossed about for a fortnight. On the next day land appeared in lat. 47° 5′ N. long. 124° 50′ W. Here was seen a small round hill, which had the appearance of being an island; between which, and the northern extremity of the land, there appeared to be a small opening, which flattered our navigators with the hopes of finding a harbour; but in this they were deceived: which led captain Cook to call the point of land Cape Flattery; lat. 88° 15′ N. long. 124° 57′ W. In this latitude geographers have placed the pretended strait of Juan de Fuca, but nothing like it was seen; and, according to our author, there is not the least probability, that ever any such thing existed.

In coasting along this continent, our navigators had strong W. and N.W. winds almost continually to encounter. Sometimes in an evening the wind would become moderate, and veer to the southward; but this was always a sure prelude to a storm, which blew the hardest at S. S. E., and was attended with rain and sleet: it seldom lasted above four or six hours, before it was succeeded by another gale from the N. W. which generally brought with it fair weather. It was by means of these southerly blasts, that they were enabled to get to the north-west at all.

On the 29th of March, land again became visible in lat. 49° 29′ N. long. 127° 31′ W. The appearance of the country here differed much from that

which had been before seen: abounding with high mountains, whose summits were covered with snow; but the valleys between them, and the grounds on the sea-coast, high as well as low, were covered, to a considerable breadth, with high straight trees, which formed a beautiful prospect, as of one vast forest. The south-east extreme of the land formed a low point, off which were many breakers, occasioned by sunken rocks; on which account it was called Point Breakers. The other extreme, which is about 35 seconds more to the north, was called Woody Point. Between these two points, the shore forms a large bay, which was called Hope Bay, expecting there to find a good harbour; nor was that expectation disappointed. At this time the ships were in great want of water. On approaching the inlet, the coast was found to be inhabited, and three canoes came off, in one of which were two men, in another six, and in the third ten. Having come pretty near the Resolution, one of the Indians stood up, and made a long harangue, which was supposed to be meant as an invitation to land: but the language in which he spoke was totally unintelligible to all on board. Whilst he was speaking, he strewed handfuls of feathers towards those in the ship, and some of his companions threw handfuls of red dust or powder, in the same manner. The speaker wore the skin of some animal, and held in each hand something which rattled as he continued to shake it. After tiring himself with his repeated exertions, of which nothing was understood, he ceased, when others took it by turns to say something, though they acted their part neither so long, nor with so much vehemence as the first. It was observed that two or three had their hair quite strewed over with

small white feathers, and others had large ones stuck into different parts of the head. After the tumultuous noise had ceased, they lay at a little distance from the ship, and conversed with each other in a very easy manner; nor did they seem to show the least surprise or distrust. Some of them now and then got up, and said something, after the manner of their first harangues; and one sung a very agreeable air, with a degree of softness and melody which was not expected, the word haela being often repeated as the burden of the song. In a short time the canoes came off in greater numbers, so that at one time there were thirty-two near the ships: these held from three to seven or eight persons each, both men and women. One of the canoes was remarkable for a single head, which had a bird's eye and bill of an enormous size painted on it; and a person who sat there, and seemed to be a chief, was no less remarkable for his uncommon appearance, having many feathers hanging from his head, and being painted in an extraordinary manner. He held in his hand a carved bird of wood, as large as a pigeon, with which he rattled, as the person first mentioned had done, and was no less vociferous in his harangue, which was attended with some expressive gestures. None of them could be prevailed upon to go on board the ships, though they gave not the least intimation either of fear or hostility. They readily parted with any thing which they had, and took whatever was offered them in exchange, but were more desirous of iron than of any other article of commerce, appearing to be perfectly acquainted with the use of that metal. Brass, however, soon supplanted iron, and the demand for it at length became so great, that few on

board were possessed of a bit when the ships left the place, except what belonged to the necessary instruments. Whole suits of clothes were stripped of every button, bureaus of their furniture, and copper kettles, tin canisters, candlesticks, and the like, all went to wreck. The articles which they proffered in barter, were, skins of various animals, such as bears, wolves, foxes, deer, racoons, polecats, martins, and in particular sea-otters; the fur of which last animal is softer and finer than that of any other known. "On which account," says captain Cook, "the discovery of this part of the continent of North America, where so valuable an article of commerce may be met with, cannot be a matter of indifference." They also offered a sort of clothing, made of the bark of a tree, or some plant like hemp; weapons, consisting of bows, arrows, and spears; fish-hooks, and instruments of various kinds; wooden vizors of many different monstrous figures; a sort of woollen stuff or blanketting; bags filled with red ochre, pieces of carved work, beads, and several little ornaments of thin brass and iron, shaped like a horse-shoe, which they hang at their noses. Two silver table spoons were purchased of some strange Indians, who came from the south-east, beyond the bay. One of these people wore them round his neck by way of ornament. These spoons were supposed, by their peculiar make, to be of Spanish manufacture. But the most extraordinary of all the articles which they brought to the ships for sale, were human skulls, and hands not quite stripped of the flesh; what was wanting of which, they signified by explicit signs that they had eaten.

It was soon found that these people were as

much addicted to thieving, as any which had been before known; and, being possessed of sharp iron instruments, they cut away the pieces of iron which were affixed to ropes, and hooks from tackle, whenever they could find an opportunity of practising their agility unobserved. One fellow would contrive to amuse the boat-keeper at one end of the boat, while another would pull out the iron-work at the opposite end.

The masts of the Resolution being discovered to be in a very decayed and rotten condition, occasioned a longer stay in this place than would otherwise have happened, being from the 30th of March to the 26th of April. Fortunately, from the drift wood, which was found floating here, some seasoned trees were obtained, which were very fit for the purposes wanted. Captain Cook, on his first arrival, gave to this inlet the name of King George's Sound; but he afterwards learned that it was called Nootka by the natives: it lies in lat. 49° 33′ N. long. 126° 48′ W. The hills about this place are in general rocky; their foundations may be considered as nothing more than stupendous rocks, of a whitish or gray cast where they have been exposed to the weather; but when broken, they appeared to be of a bluish gray, like that universal sort which is found at Kerguelen's Land. As far as experience could be had of the climate, it appeared to be much milder than that of the east coast of America, under the same parallel of latitude: the mercury in the thermometer never, even in the night, fell lower than 42 degrees; and very often in the day rose to 60 degrees. No such thing as frost was perceived in any of the low grounds: on the contrary, vegetation had made a considerable progress, for grass was found so early

in the spring already a foot long. As pine-trees abounded here, a party of men and an officer were appointed to brew spruce beer. At first the natives required their visiters to pay even for the wood and water which they procured, and when their demands were not complied with, they made a merit of necessity, but frequently reminded the gentlemen of the ships, that they had given them wood and water out of friendship; which led captain Cook to observe, that, in his several voyages, he no where met with any uncivilized nation or tribe, who had such strict notions of their having a right to the exclusive property of every thing that their country produces, as the inhabitants of this. When a party was sent to cut grass, the natives opposed them, though without violence, saying, they must makook, that is, must first buy it. Our commander, who happened to be on shore, agreed for the purchase, but could not by any means obtain the consent of the natives to cut it, until they saw that he had entirely emptied his pockets of whatever they had coveted. But though they are thus tenacious, even to niggardliness, of what they consider as their property, yet they do not appear to be wanting in generosity and liberality of temper upon other occasions. One of the chiefs, who had for some time attached himself to captain Cook, was among the last who quitted the ship when it was about to sail. The captain having bestowed on him some small presents previous to departing, the chief, in return, gave his visiter a beaver skin, of much greater value: this produced another present on the part of the captain; and the Indian, not to be outdone in generosity, insisted upon his acceptance of a beaver-skin cloak which he then wore, and which he appeared

particularly to prize. The contest of liberality did not cease here, for the captain, not willing to be outdone, presented the chief with a new broad sword, the hilt of which was of brass. The possession of this invaluable rarity made the Indian happy to a degree which he had never felt before.

Although these people were found to treat their enemies with a brutal cruelty, yet they seem to be docile, courteous and good-natured; and, notwithstanding the predominant phlegm of their tempers, quick in resenting what they look upon as an injury; and, like most other passionate people, soon forget it. They discovered very little curiosity, being always contented to procure the articles which they were acquainted with and wanted; regarding every thing else with great indifference; nor did the persons, apparel and manners of their new guests, although so very different from their own, or even the size and extraordinary construction of the ships, seem to excite admiration, or so much as to draw attention. This insensibility to objects so striking, may be accounted for from their extreme indolence, which could not be shaken off by the strongest incentives to activity. Notwithstanding this leading feature in their character, they are described as extremely fond of music, which is chiefly of the grave and serious, but truly pathetic kind. They keep the most exact concert in their songs, which are often sung by great numbers together. Their music is not of that confined sort found among many rude nations; for the variations are very numerous and expressive, and the cadence or melody powerfully soothing. The music was sometimes varied from its predominant solemnity of air, and there were instances of stanzas being sung in a more

gay and lively strain, and even with a degree of humour. For this harmony of sounds they are indebted more to the voice than to any instruments; for the only instrumental music, if such it may be called, which was seen among them, were, a rattle, and a small whistle about an inch long, incapable of any variation, from having but one hole. The rattles are for the most part made in the shape of a bird, with a few pebbles in the belly, and the tail is the handle. They have others, however, which bear rather more resemblance to a child's rattle; these they use when they sing: but upon what occasion the whistle is used, was not known, but it was conjectured that it helped them to imitate the howl or cry of animals; to catch which they have a very singular method:—They cover themselves with a skin, and run upon all fours, which they do on those occasions very nimbly. Captain Cook once saw one of them dressed in a wolf's skin, with the head over his own, and imitating that animal, by making a squeaking noise with one of these whistles, which he had in his mouth.

According to Mr. Anderson, the language of these people abounds more with labial and dental, than with guttural sounds. It bears no resemblance to that of the Esquimaux Indians, or those about Hudson's Bay; but a most obvious agreement has been discovered between it and the language of the Mexican Indians. Though many things were met with here, which were either of European manufacture, or at least obtained from some civilized nation, yet not the least sign could be traced of these people having ever seen or heard of ships like those which then visited them, nor of their having traded with such people as came in them. The only

way by which it could be probably imagined that they procure their iron, is from trading for it with other Indian tribes, who either have immediate connection with European settlements upon that continent, or receive it perhaps through several intermediate nations. The same might be said of the brass and copper found among them. Captain Cook conjectures that these metals must be brought either from Hudson's Bay and Canada, or from the north-western part of Mexico; and there are the strongest reasons to suppose, that it is from the latter. It was computed that the number of inhabitants in the two towns or villages, which seemed to be the only inhabited parts of the sound, might amount to about 2,000. These people can boast none of those native graceful powers of oratory, which are so remarkably possessed by the Sachems to the eastward of this continent; they make use of only short sentences, or rather single words, forcibly repeated, and constantly in one tone and degree of strength, accompanied only with a single gesture, which they use at every sentence, jerking their whole body a little forward by bending their knees; their arms all the while hanging down by their sides.

The employment of the men seems to be fishing, and killing land or sea-animals: whilst the women are engaged at home in manufacturing the flax and woollen garments; the former composed of the bark of the pine-tree, the latter taken from different animals, as the fox and brown lynx. The preparing and drying sardines, or the anchovy fish, of which great numbers are caught here, also falls to the lot of the women. These fish the men bring to shore, and deposit on the beach, from whence the women convey them away in twig baskets. The women

likewise go in small canoes to gather muscles and other shell-fish, and manage those boats with as much dexterity as the men, who, when in the canoes with them, seem to pay little attention to their sex, by offering to relieve them from the labour of the paddle; nor indeed do they treat them with any particular respect or tenderness in other situations. The young men appear to be the most indolent or idle set in this community; for they were either sitting about in scattered companies, to bask themselves in the sun, or lie wallowing in the sand upon the beach, like a number of hogs, for the same purpose, without any covering. However, this disregard to decency was confined to the men; for the women were always properly clothed, and behaved with the utmost propriety, justly deserving the highest commendation for a bashfulness and modesty becoming their sex, the more meritorious in them, as the men seem to have no sense of shame.

The persons of the natives are in general under the middle stature, but not slender in proportion, being commonly pretty full and plump, though not muscular. The visage of most of them is round and full; sometimes also broad, with high prominent cheeks, and above these the face is frequently much depressed, or seems fallen in quite across between the temples, the nose also flattening at its base, with pretty wide nostrils, and a rounded point. Most commonly they entirely eradicate the beard, or suffer only a small thin circle of hair to grow on the point of the chin. Some of the natives, however, and particularly the old men, were seen with considerable beards all over the chin. The hair of the head is in great abundance, very coarse and

strong, and, without a single exception, black, straight and lank, or hanging over the shoulders.

The ingenuity of these people appears in their manufactures and mechanic arts, which, both in design and execution, surpass every thing which could be expected from the natural disposition of the people, and the little progress which civilization has made among them in other respects. They have an endless variety of carved wooden masks or vizors, which they apply to the face, or the upper part of the head, or forehead. Some of these resemble human faces, furnished with hair, beards and eye-brows; others, the heads of birds, particularly of eagles; and many, the heads of land and sea animals, as wolves, deer, porpoises, and others. In general, these representations much exceed the natural size. Sometimes they fix on the upper part of the head large pieces of carved work, resembling the prow of a canoe, painted in the same manner, and projecting to a considerable distance. In forming many of the human masks and heads, they show themselves to be ingenious sculptors. They not only preserve with great exactness the general character of their own faces, but finish the more minute parts with great accuracy in the proportions, and neatness in proportion. To their skill in working figures in their garments, and carving them in wood, must be added that of drawing them in colours. "We have sometimes seen," says captain Cook, "the whole process of their whale-fishery painted on the caps they wear. This, though rudely executed, serves at least to show, that, though there be no appearance of the knowledge of letters among them, yet they have some notion of a method by which to commemorate and represent actions in a

lasting way, independently of what may be recorded in their songs and traditions."

Their common dress is a flaxen garment or mantle, ornamented on the upper edge by a narrow stripe of fur, and at the lower edge by fringes or tassels: it passes under the left arm, and is tied over the right shoulder by a string before, and one behind near its middle; by which means both arms are left free. This mantle is frequently fastened by a girdle round the waist. Over this, which reaches below the knees, is worn a small cloak of the same substance, likewise fringed at the lower part. In shape this resembles a round dish-cover, being quite close except in the middle, where is a hole just big enough to admit the head; and then, resting upon the shoulders, it covers the arms to the elbows, and the body as far as the waist. Their head is covered with a cap of the figure of a truncated cone, or like a flower-pot, made of fine matting, having the top frequently ornamented with a round or pointed knob, or bunch of leathern tassels; and there is a string that passes under the chin, to prevent its blowing off. Besides the above dress, which is common to both sexes, the men frequently throw over their other garments the skin of a bear, seal, or sea-otter, with the hair outward; they have also woollen garments, which, however, are little in use. As they rub their bodies constantly over with a red paint, of a clayey or coarse ochry substance, mixed with oil, their garments, by that means, contract a rancid offensive smell, and a great nastiness; besides which, their head as well as garments swarm with vermin, which they pick off with great composure, and eat. They frequently stain their faces with a brighter red colour than their bodies receive,

or sometimes with a black or white colour, the last of which gives them a ghastly and disgusting aspect: they also strew the brown martial mica upon the paint, which makes it glitter. The ears of many of them are perforated in the lobe, where they make a pretty large hole, and two others higher up on the outer edge. In these holes they hang bits of bone, quills fixed upon a leathern thong, small shells, bunches of woollen tassels, or pieces of thin copper, which the beads now brought to market were not able to supplant. The septum of the nose in many was also perforated, through which they draw a piece of soft cord; and others wear at the same place small thin pieces of iron, brass or copper, shaped almost like a horse-shoe, the narrow opening of which receives the septum, so as that the two points may gently pinch it: and the ornament thus hangs over the upper lip. The rings and brass buttons, which they eagerly purchased, were appropriated to this use. About their wrists they wear bracelets, or bunches of white bugle-beads, made of a conic shelly substance; and about their ankles they also frequently wear many folds of leathern thongs, or the sinews of animals twisted to a considerable thickness. Though encrusted in filth, and the prey of vermin, yet the idea of adorning their persons, in conformity to the notions of elegance and taste which prevail, produces coxcombs even among this rude race of men; for we are told by Ellis, that one of their greatest beaux frequently came on board the ships; and, in order to observe the manner of painting their faces, a looking-glass was shown him, which he no sooner found the use of, than he sat down to dress his face, which employed him full two hours; for he no

sooner put on one face than he disliked it, and demolished the whole, and continued rubbing out and painting, till he made one that pleased him.

Notwithstanding the dirty and forbidding appearance of the women, some few gentlemen of the ships so far laid aside their delicacies as to admit them to their beds, in which case the poor stinking creatures always underwent the ceremony of the mop and pail, and their hair was as well combed as time would permit, in order to dislodge the disagreeable attendants who resided there. It was a prevailing opinion, that the women brought on this occasion were not of their own tribe, but belonged to some other, which they had overcome in battle. What led to this supposition was, the different manner in which these were treated from such women as were not so exposed and prostituted. The former were mute, did not dare to look up, appeared quite dejected, and were totally under the command of those who brought them: the latter, on the contrary, were as full of conversation as the men, behaved with ease, and seemed under no degrading control.

Their houses are disposed in three ranges or rows, rising gradually behind each other, those in front being the largest. The whole range of these houses may be seen at once, the separation between one house and another being very slight: so that the whole may be compared to a long stable, with a double range of stalls, and a broad passage in the middle. Close to the sides, in each of these parts, is a little bench of boards, raised five or six inches higher than the rest of the floor, and covered with mats, on which the family sit and sleep. These benches are commonly seven or eight feet long, and four or five broad; in the middle of the floor,

between them, is the fire-place, which has neither hearth nor chimney. In one house, which was at the end of a middle-range, almost quite separated from the rest by a high close partition, and the most regular as to design of any that were seen, there were four of these benches, each of which held a single family at a corner, but without any separation by boards; and the middle part of the house appeared common to them all. In these houses every thing lies in the utmost confusion, and their nastiness and stench are at least equal to their confusion; being as filthy as hog-sties, and every thing in and about them stinking of fish, train-oil and smoke. Their manner of eating is exactly consonant to the nastiness of their houses and persons; for the troughs and platters in which they put their food, appeared never to have been washed from the time they were first made: and the dirty remains of a former meal are only swept away by a succeeding one. They also tear every thing, solid or tough, to pieces with their hands and teeth; for, though they make use of their knives to cut off the larger portions, they have no thought of reducing these to smaller pieces and mouthfuls, by the same means, though obviously more convenient and cleanly. But they seem to have no idea of cleanliness, for they eat the roots which they dig from the ground, without so much as shaking off the soil which adheres to them.

They make use of a thick leathern mantle, formed of the skin of an elk or a buffalo tanned; this, by being doubled, is rendered proof not only against arrows, but even spears. Whilst the natives were showing their guests the efficacy of this leathern armour, a gentleman on board shot a musket-ball

through one of them, which was folded six times, at which they were so much staggered, that they plainly discovered their ignorance of the effect of fire-arms, of which they afterwards knew more from seeing birds shot, which evidently confounded them; and the explanations which they received of the use of shot and ball, produced the most significant marks of their having no previous idea of this matter. When they go on warlike expeditions, they sometimes wear a kind of leathern cloak, covered with rows of dried hoofs of deer, disposed horizontally, appended by leathern thongs, covered with quills, which, when they move, make a loud rattling noise, almost equal to that of so many small bells. It seems, doubtful, however, whether this part of their garb be intended to strike terror in war, or is to be considered as merely belonging to their eccentric ornaments on ceremonious occasions; for one of their musical entertainments was conducted by a man dressed in this sort of cloak, with his mask on, and shaking his rattle.

Many of the houses here are decorated with images, which are the trunks of very large trees, four or five feet high, set up singly or by pairs at the upper end of the apartment, with the front carved into a human face, the arms and hands cut out upon the sides, and variously painted; so that the whole is a truly monstrous figure. The general name given by the natives to these images is Klumma, and the particular names of two, which were set up in one of the houses, were Natchkoa and Matseeta. A mat, by way of curtain, is for the most part hung before them, which the natives were not always willing to remove. It should seem, that they are accustomed at times to make offerings to

them, as they made signs which were interpreted to mean, that the visiters should give something to these images, when they drew aside the mats which concealed them: this led to a conclusion, that they were representations of their gods, or symbols of some religious or superstitious objects; and yet they parted with them readily for a small quantity of brass or iron: and it seems to be highly probable, upon the whole, that they are not idols, but the representations of some of their ancestors, whose memories they particularly venerate.

Their largest canoes are formed of one tree, although they carry twenty people or more. Many of them are forty feet long, seven broad, and about three deep. On these little ornament is bestowed: they are very light, and their breadth and flatness enable them to swim firmly without an outrigger, which none of them have, nor even sails, the whole of their navigation being effected by paddles. For catching fish they have an instrument like an oar, about twenty feet long, four or five inches broad, and about half an inch thick: each edge, for about two-thirds of its length, the other third being its handle, is set with sharp bone-teeth, about two inches long. Herrings and sardines, and such other small fish as come in shoals, are attacked with this instrument, which is stuck into the shoal, and the fish are caught either upon or between the teeth. The harpoon, with which they strike the whales and lesser sea-animals, shows a great reach of contrivance. It is composed of a piece of bone, cut into two barbs, in which is fixed the oval blade of a large muscle-shell, in which is the point of the instrument. To this is fastened about two or three fathoms of rope; and to throw this harpoon, they

use a shaft of about twelve or sixteen feet long, to which the line or rope is made fast, and to one end of which the harpoon is fixed, so as to separate from the shaft, and leave it floating on the water as a buoy, when the animal darts away with the harpoon.

On the evening of the 26th of April, 1778, the two ships quitted Nootka or King George's Sound, and had no sooner cleared it, than they were overtaken with a violent storm, which, on the next day, increased to a hurricane, and in the height of its fury the Resolution sprung a leak, which, after creating very alarming apprehensions, was found to be of less consequence than had been supposed, one pump being sufficient to keep it under. In the morning of the 28th, the storm began to abate, and captain Cook steered N. W. by N. with a fresh gale at S. S. E. and fair weather, which did not long continue. On the 30th, at noon, the ships were in latitude 53° 22′ longitude 134° 40′ W. In the evening of the 1st of May, land again became visible in latitude 55° 20′. The next day they passed a group of small islands, lying under the main land. A projecting point of land, which was seen here, captain Cook called Cape Edgecombe; latitude 57° 3′, longitude 135° 53′ W. On the 6th of May the ships had only advanced to 59° 8′ N. having proceeded slowly on account of the light winds and calms which had prevailed. In their farther progress, our navigators found the coast to trend very much to the west, inclining hardly any thing to the north. On an island, situated in latitude 59° 51′, captain Cook landed, and there, at the foot of a tree, he left a bottle with a paper in it, on which was written the names of the ships,

and the date of their arrival there; with which were inclosed two silver two-penny pieces of the date of 1772, which had been furnished by the Rev. Dr. Kaye, dean of Lincoln, after whom the island was named. It is eleven or twelve leagues in length, in the direction of north and south, but its breadth is not much above a league in any part. Captain Cook named the inlet on the continent opposite to this island, Comptroller's Bay. In order to stop his leak, and shelter himself from the foul weather which he foresaw approaching, our navigator cast anchor in a neighbouring inlet; when two canoes immediately put off from the shore, having on board about twenty natives. These boats were made of the skins of seals, laid over a frame constructed of slender laths. The ships afterwards proceeded higher up a great inlet, in a northern direction, and on the 15th came to an anchor. Early the next morning several great and small canoes came off to the ships, some of the natives in which ventured on board, among whom was a chief, a good-looking middle-aged man. He was clothed in a dress made of the sea-otter's skin, and had on his head such a cap as is worn by the people of King George's Sound, ornamented with sky-blue glass beads, about the size of a large pea, which he seemed to estimate much higher than the white glass beads which were on board the ships; and Ellis says, that five or six blue beads would procure from these Americans a beaver-skin worth ninety or a hundred dollars. These people soon proved themselves not to be deficient in honour or generosity; for upon captain Clerke giving one of them a glass bowl, he was so much delighted, that he immediately pulled off his own dress, which was made of the skins of birds, and presented it to his

benefactor. They expressed a predilection for iron; but they wanted pieces eight or ten inches long at least, and of the breadth of three or four fingers, for they absolutely rejected small pieces: consequently few exchanges were made, as by this time iron had become a scarce commodity. The points of some of their spears or lances were of that metal, others were of copper, and a few of bone. The natives soon formed a design of plundering the Discovery, supposing that very few of her crew were on board her, it being then about two o'clock in the morning, and the men in their hammocks: but the seamen no sooner came upon deck, with drawn cutlasses in their hands, than the whole party of plunderers sneaked off to their canoes. Immediately afterwards they made the like attempt on a boat, in which they equally failed: but in both instances they retired with much deliberation and indifference, and with as little concern as if they had done nothing amiss; and they were seen to describe to those of their countrymen who had not been on board, how much longer the knives of the ship's crew were than theirs. From this circumstance, captain Cook very justly infers, that these people were unacquainted with fire-arms; for, if they had known any thing of their effect, they would not have dared to attempt taking a boat from under the ship's guns, in the face of above a hundred men, for most of the crew were looking at them, when they made the attempt upon the boat. "However," he adds, "after all the tricks, we had the good fortune to leave them as ignorant as we found them in this respect; for they neither heard nor saw a musket fired, unless at birds." The next day several of the Americans came alongside in their canoes,

bringing with them the calumet of peace, conscious no doubt of the impropriety of their conduct. This was the first instance in which it had been seen: it was a stick about four feet long, upon which, in different parts, were tied the feathers of birds, and perfectly answered the description given in the Russian voyages of discovery. One of them offered it several times to some seamen who were in a boat alongside the Discovery; but as they took no notice of him, he at last threw it into the boat. Some few had their faces painted, or rather daubed with red earth, and many wore gloves made of the skins of animals, as well as stockings, with the hairy side inward.

In mooring the Resolution with the kedge anchor and hawser, one of the seamen happened to be carried overboard by the buoy-rope, and followed the anchor to the bottom. In this very critical situation, he had the presence of mind to disengage himself: he rose to the surface of the water, and was taken up with one of his legs fractured in a dangerous manner. On the 15th the ship was heeled into port, in order to come at and stop her leak. In two days the leak was stopped, and the sheathing made good over it. On the 17th the ship weighed, and proceeded to the north-westward, in order to determine whether there was an opening in that direction; the land seeming to incline to the southward, in a direction so contrary to the modern charts, founded on the late Russian discoveries, that captain Cook entertained some expectation of finding a passage to the north, and that the land to the west and south-west was only a group of islands; but in the morning of the next day, land appearing to the northward, the expectation of finding a

passage in that direction was given up, though not before the most diligent search had been made by parties sent out in boats to trace the coast. They were then upwards of five hundred and twenty leagues to the westward of any part of Baffin's or of Hudson's Bay; and our author asserts, that, whatever passage there is, it must be, either altogether or in part, to the north of the 72d degree of latitude, and he entertained no expectation of finding a passage or strait of such extent.

On the 18th, in the morning, the ships proceeded to the southward, down the inlet, at the mouth of which an island, extending eighteen leagues in the direction of N. E. and S.W. was found to lie, which received the name of Montague Island. To the inlet which the ships had now left, captain Cook gave the name of Prince William's Sound; the Indian name for this spot is not mentioned; it is supposed to occupy a degree and a half of latitude, and two of longitude. Captain Cook makes no mention of the latitude and longitude of the place where the ships lay; Ellis places them in 60° 31′ N. 147° 24. W.

The natives had many peculiarities in their dress and appearance from those of Nootka Sound. They do not paint their bodies. Their common dress, for men, women and children, are clothed alike, is a kind of close frock, or rather robe, reaching generally to the ankles, though sometimes only to the knees. At the upper part is a hole, just sufficient to admit the head, with sleeves that reach to the wrist. These frocks are made of the skins of different animals, the most common of which are those of the sea-otter, grey fox, racoon, and pine-martin, with many of seal-skins; and in general they are

with the hairy side outward. Some also have these frocks made of the skins of fowls, with only the down remaining on them, which they glue on other substances. This is their fair-weather dress: when it rains, they put over it another frock, ingeniously made of the intestines of whales, or some other large animal, prepared so skilfully as almost to resemble our goldbeater's leaf. It is made to draw tight round the neck; its sleeves reach as low as the wrist, round which they are tied with a string; and its skirts, when they are in their canoes, are drawn over the rim of the hole in which they sit, so that no water can enter: at the same time it keeps the men entirely dry upward, for no water can penetrate through it any more than through a bladder. This, as well as the common frock made of the skins, bears a great resemblance to the dress of the Greenlanders, as described by Krantz; in whose history many other striking instances may be observed, in which the Greenlanders and these Americans resemble each other. Some of the men, like those at Nootka, wore upon their heads high truncated conic caps, made of straw, and sometimes of wood. Both sexes have the ears perforated with several holes, about the outer and lower part of the edge, in which they hang little bunches of beads, made of the same tubulous shelly substance used for this purpose by those of Nootka. The septum of the nose is also perforated, through which they frequently thrust the quill-feathers of small birds, or little bending ornaments, made of the above shelly substance, strung on a stiff string or cord, three or four inches long, which gives them a truly grotesque appearance. But the most uncommon and unsightly ornamental fashion, which is adopted by some of

both sexes, is their having the under lip slit or cut quite through, in the direction of the mouth, a little below the swelling part. This incision, which is made even in the sucking children, is often above two inches long; and either by its natural retraction, when the wound is fresh, or by the repetition of some artificial management, assumes the true shape of lips, and becomes so large, as to admit the tongue through; and it actually was so projecting in the very first person who was seen with such an incision, that it led one of the seamen to exclaim with astonishment, that the man had two mouths. In this artificial mouth they stick a flat narrow ornament, made chiefly out of a solid shell or bone, cut into little narrow pieces, like small teeth, almost down to the base, or thickest part, which has a small projecting bit at each end, that supports it when put into the divided lip, the cut part then appearing outward. Others have the lower lip only perforated into separate holes, and then the ornament consists of as many distinct shelly studs, whose points are pushed through these holes; and their heads appear within the lip, as another row of teeth immediately under their own.

Many beads, of European manufacture, were found among them, chiefly of a pale blue colour, which they hung in their ears, about their caps, or joined to their lip-ornaments. So fond are these people of ornament, that they stick any thing they can meet with in the perforated lip: one man stuck two iron nails, which he had purchased in barter, making them project from thence like prongs; and another endeavoured to put a large brass button there. Captain Cook concludes his account of the persons of these people thus: " Upon the whole, I

have no where seen savages who take more pains than these people do to ornament, or rather to disfigure their persons."

With what tools they make their wooden utensils, frames of boats and other things, is uncertain, as the only one seen among them was a kind of stone adze, formed almost after the manner of those at Otaheite and the other islands of the South Sea. They have a great many iron knives, some of which are straight, others a little curved, and some very small ones, fixed in pretty long handles, with the blades bent upward, like some of our shoe-makers instruments. But they have knives of another sort, which are sometimes near two feet long, shaped almost like a dagger, with a ridge in the middle. These they wear in sheaths of skins, hung by a thong round the neck, under their robe; and they are probably used only as weapons, the other knives being apparently applied to other purposes. Every thing they have, however, is as well and ingeniously made, as if they were furnished with the most complete tool-chest; and their sewing, plaiting of sinews, and small works on their little bags, may be put in competition with the most delicate manufactures found in any part of the known world. "In short," continues our author, "considering the otherwise uncivilized or rude state in which these people are, their northern situation, amidst a country perpetually covered with snow, and the wretched materials they have to work with, it appears that their invention and dexterity, in all manual works, is at least equal to that of any other nation."

Their method of eating seems decent and cleanly, for they always took care to separate any dirt that might adhere to their victuals; and though they

sometimes did eat the raw fat of some sea-animals, they cut it carefully into mouthfuls with their small knives. The same might be said of their persons, which to appearance were always clean and decent, without grease or dirt; and the wooden vessels in which their victuals are probably put, were kept in excellent order, as well as their boats, which were neat, and free from lumber. Of the skins worn by the natives, the most common were those of the martin, racoon, and sea-otter; but the skins of the first, which in general were of a much lighter brown than those of Nootka, were far superior to them in fineness; whereas the last, which, as well as the martin's, were far more plentiful at Prince William's Sound; seemed greatly inferior in fineness and thickness of their fur, though they greatly exceeded them in size, and were almost all of the glossy black sort, which is the colour most esteemed in those skins.

On quitting this spot, the ships proceeded to the south-west; but our navigator was soon after flattered with the hope of finding a passage to the northward, without being obliged to trace the unfavourable trending of this projecting coast. The expectation was chiefly founded on the report made by the Russians, in their several voyages from Asia hither. A lofty promontory was passed on the 21st of May, which being the eve of the anniversary of the princess Elizabeth's birth-day, was named Cape Elizabeth; lat. 59° 10′, long. 152° 15′ W. Soon after other land appeared in sight, bearing W.S.W.; another low point of land was named, on the 25th, Point Banks, lat. 58° 41′ N., long. 152° 16′ W.; twelve leagues to the westward of which a very lofty promontory was seen, whose elevated summit

formed two exceedingly high mountains, which towered above the clouds: this was named Cape Douglas. Between the point and the cape, the coast seemed to form a large and deep bay, which obtained the name of Smoky Bay, from some smoke which was seen to arise. Here captain Cook sometimes traced the progress of captain Beering, a Russian navigator, who visited this coast in the year 1741; but the account of that voyage is so very much abridged, and the chart so extremely inaccurate, that it was hardly possible, either by the one or by the other, or by comparing both together, to find any one place which that navigator either saw or touched at.

On the 28th a kedge anchor, with an eight inches hawser bent to it, was dropped from the Resolution; but in bringing the ship up, the hawser parted near the inner end, and both it and the anchor were lost. Repeated endeavours were used to recover them, but all without effect. On the evening of the same day both ships stood up the inlet. On the 30th two canoes, with a man in each, came off to the ships; after some apparent hesitation they came quite close to the Resolution. One of the men talked a great deal, but to no purpose, for not a word which he said was understood. They exactly resembled the people seen at Prince William's Sound. The channel now contracted to the breadth of four leagues, through which ran a prodigious tide, the cause of which was at that time unknown; to avoid it the ships proceeded along the western coast. On the evening of the 30th the water was found to be considerably fresher, when the tide was run out, than that of the sea, which plainly demonstrated that they had been advancing up a river

instead of tracing a narrow sea. On the 31st the natives visited the ships in one large and several small canoes. On their approach they displayed a leathern frock upon a long pole, which was interpreted to be a symbol of their peaceable intentions. This frock they conveyed into the ship, in return for some trifles which captain Cook gave them. On the 1st of June, the master, who had been sent to examine the course of the river, returned and reported that he had found it contracted to the breadth of a league; he then proceeded three leagues farther up, finding it all the way navigable for the largest ships. He landed on a part of the eastern coast, where he saw currant-bushes. An ineffectual attempt was afterwards made to trace an inlet, which ran to the eastward, and appeared to be a branch of this river, or rather a distinct river emptying itself into it; but the tide was too strong for the boats, which were sent out for that purpose, to make head against it; it received the name of River Turnagain, as the ships proceeded no farther than its mouth. As the water, during the ebb, though very considerably fresher than at flood, yet retained a strong degree of saltness, it was concluded that the smaller, as well as the main river, is navigable for ships a considerable way up; and that a very extensive inland communication might be opened by their means. The main river was traced as high as the latitude of 61° 30′, lon. 160° W., which is seventy leagues or more from its entrance, without seeing the least appearance of its source. Captain Cook, in his journal, having left a blank for the name of the river, by the direction of the earl of Sandwich, it was filled up with the name of Cook's River. When our commander has occasion after-

wards to speak of this river in his journal, it is by the name of The Great River.

The season was advancing apace, and they knew not how far it might be necessary for to proceed to the southward, as it became evident that the continent of North America extended farther to the west than had been expected from modern charts of the best reputation, which rendered the probability of a passage into Baffin's and Hudson's Bay less probable; as, if any such did exist, it must pass over a much greater extent of country. Previous to quitting this river, Mr. King was sent with two armed boats to land on the south-east side, there to display the flag, and take possession of the country and the river in the name of king George III., and to bury in the ground some pieces of English coin, of the year 1772, and a paper on which was inscribed the names of the ships and the day of their visit. The land, from these circumstances, was named Point Possession. About twenty of the natives approached this party with their arms extended, probably to express their peaceable disposition. At the sight of the muskets, which the gentlemen carried, these people seemed alarmed, and made signs, expressive of their request to lay them down, which was done accordingly. The gentlemen then joined them, and were received with cheerfulness and kindness. These Indians had a few pieces of salmon and several dogs. Mr. Law, surgeon to the Discovery, who was one of the party, having bought a dog, took it down towards the boat, and shot it dead in their sight. Ellis adds, that it was carried on board to furnish a fresh meal; so that the gentlemen had learned from their friends at Otaheite, to relish a repast of dog's flesh. The natives seemed

alarmed at this mode of execution; and, as if they did not think themselves safe in such company, immediately walked away. It was afterwards discovered that they had hid their spears and other weapons in the bushes close behind them, so that their confidence in the strangers was rather apparent than real. The next day several large and small canoes with natives came off, who bartered their skins; after which they sold their garments, till many of them were quite naked. Among others, they brought a number of white hare or rabbit skins, and very beautiful red ones of foxes, but only two or three skins of otters, with some pieces of salmon and halibut. They preferred iron to every thing else offered in exchange. On the same day the ships weighed with the first ebb, and plied down the river, a gentle breeze from the south blowing full against them; in doing which the Resolution struck, and stuck fast on a bank lying nearly in the middle of the river: however, as the flood-tide came in, she floated off, without receiving any damage. The discovery of this bank accounted for the very strong rippling or agitation of the stream, which had been observed when turning up the river. The next day the wind being still contrary, the ships proceeded with the return of the ebb, and no sooner came to an anchor, than many of the natives visited them, bringing a large quantity of very fine salmon, which they exchanged for trifles; most of it was split ready for drying, and several hundred weight of it was procured for the two ships. "Half a salmon," says Ellis, "might be purchased for a nail or button." In the afternoon of this day, the mountains, for the first time, appeared cloudless, and a volcano was discovered in one of those on the

west side, in lat. 60° 23′: at that time it emitted only a white smoke without any fire.

All the people who were seen in this river seemed, by a very striking instance of resemblance, to be of the same nation with those who inhabit Prince William's Sound, but essentially different from those of Nootka or King George's Sound, both in their persons and language. The language of these is rather guttural; but, like the others, they speak strongly and distinctly in words which seem sentences. The points of their spears and their knives were of iron; but some of the former were made of copper. Their knives, which they kept in sheaths, were of considerable length.

"There is not the least doubt," says captain Cook, "that a very beneficial fur trade might be carried on with the inhabitants of this vast coast; but unless a northern passage should be found practicable, it seems rather too remote for Great Britain to receive any emolument from it. It must, however, be observed, that the most valuable, or rather the only valuable skins met with on this west side of America, were those of the sea-otter; all their other skins appearing to be of inferior quality, particularly those of their foxes and martins. It must also be observed, that most of the skins which were purchased were made up into garments: however, some of these were in good condition, but others were old and ragged enough, and all of them very lousy; but as these poor people make no other use of skins than for clothing themselves, it cannot be supposed that they are at the trouble of dressing more of them than are necessary for this purpose; and perhaps this is the chief use for which they kill the animals, as the sea and the rivers seem to

supply them with the principal articles of food. Were they once habituated to a constant trade with foreigners, things would be much otherwise: by introducing them to an acquaintance with new luxuries, their wants would be increased; and in order to provide for these, they would be more assiduous in procuring skins, which they would soon discover to be the commodity most sought after; and there is no doubt that the country could furnish a plentiful supply."

The tides are considerable in this river, and contribute very much to facilitate its navigation. It is high water in the stream on the days of the new and full moon. The tides rise upon a perpendicular between three and four fathoms. The reason of their being greater here than at other parts of this coast is easily accounted for; the mouth of the river being situated in a corner of the coast, the flood that comes from the ocean is forced into it by both shores, and on that account swells the tide to a great height.

Contrary winds continued to retard their progress out of Cook's River, which was not entirely quitted until the 6th of June. On the 14th, an island, six leagues in extent, in the direction of east and west, was seen, and named Trinity Island, lat. 56° 36′, long. 155 degrees west. Two days after another spot received the name of Foggy Island, it being supposed to be the same land seen and so named by Beering. Coasting along the narrow peninsula which forms a part of the continent of North America, and which has been called by the Russians Alàska, with the wind generally unfavourable, on the 26th of June, at half past four in the morning, the weather being so thick that nothing could be

seen at the distance of a hundred yards, those on board the Resolution were alarmed at hearing the sound of breakers on their larboard-bow, which led captain Cook to cast anchor, and to call to the Discovery to do the like. A few hours after, the fog having somewhat cleared away, the danger which they had escaped appeared to have been imminent, as the ships had passed between such rocks and breakers in the dark, as captain Cook would not have ventured through in a clear day; and they were then found to have gained such an anchoring-place without choice, than which a better could not have been chosen! Ellis, who also mentions this deliverance, calls it "a most providential escape;" adding, "if we had stood on five minutes longer, we must, in all probability, have been on shore; or if we had varied to the right or left, we should have run the risk of being upon the rocks." Captain Cook, in his chart, distinguishes the cape near which this event happened by the name of Cape Providence.

They were now arrived at the island of Oonalashka. In this course a volcano had been seen on the very summit of a hill, which formed a complete cone, lying in lat. 54° 48', long. 164° 15' W., which most probably was situated on the neighbouring island of Oonemak. In this course a very seasonable refreshment was obtained, by upward of a hundred halibut being caught, some of which were a hundred pounds weight, and none less than twenty pounds. Some Indians, who reached the Discovery in their canoes, in their expressions of civility seemed to have copied the European mode of bowing and taking off their caps. One of them presented to captain Clerke a note written in the Russian lan-

guage, which none on board could make any thing of. Some other papers of the like kind were afterwards brought by the natives, which, in the sequel, were found to be memorials left by Russian ships which had touched there. One man, who came off to the Resolution, wore a pair of green cloth breeches, and a jacket of black cloth or stuff, under the gut-shirt or frock of his own country: he had with him a bladder full of something, which was supposed to be oil, for he opened it, took a mouthful, and then fastened it again.

In another harbour in the same island, and which was called by the natives Samganoodha, the ships remained until the 2d of July. Here good water was procured in great abundance, but no wood.

On the 9th of July captain Cook, having traced the north-western coast of Alaska, expected to find a free passage to the north; but, to his great disappointment, it proved to strike off in a direction due west. In lat. 58° 27′, long. 158° 5′ W., the entrance of a large river was observed. At the tide of ebb, the water was found to fall two feet and upward; at which time it was not half so salt as common sea-water. On the 11th, some thunder was heard, for the first time since their arrival on the American coast. On the 16th our navigator had reached the extent of the western trending of the coast, the point of which he called Cape Newenham, lat. 58° 42′, long. 162° 24′ W., where possession was taken of the country, in the name of the king of Great Britain, and a bottle was left, containing a paper, on which was written the names of the ships, and the date of the discovery. This point of land forms the north-eastern extremity of a vast bay, of which the promontory of Alaska is the sou-

thern boundary; and this was named Bristol Bay, in honour of the then admiral earl of Bristol. The river before seen was also called Bristol River. From Cape Newenham the ships proceeded in a northern course; and in the 60th degree of latitude a low point of land appeared, which obtained the name of Shoal Ness.

A number of the natives came off from this part of the coast, making signs of amity, and were presently induced to traffic: they gave skins, bows, arrows, darts, wooden vessels, and other things, readily taking in exchange whatever was offered them. They seemed to be the same sort of people which had been seen quite from Prince William's Sound; wore the same knots of ornaments in their lips and noses; but were far more dirty, and not so well clothed. No foreign article was seen in their possession, except a knife, if such it might be called, being only a piece of common iron fitted into a wooden handle, so as to answer the purpose of a knife. One part of their dress, which was procured from them, was a girdle very neatly made of skin, with trappings depending from it, and passing between the legs, so as to conceal the adjoining parts. From the use of such a girdle, it should seem that they sometimes go naked, even in this high latitude, as they hardly wear it under their clothing. The shoals, which were met with on this part of the coast, determined captain Cook to quit it; he therefore proceeded at first to the southward, then westwardly, and soon after to the northward.

On the 3d of August, Mr. Anderson, surgeon of the Resolution, died: he had been lingering under a consumption for more than twelve months. Captain Cook speaks of him in very respectful terms,

describing him as a sensible young man, an agreeable companion, one well skilled in his own profession, and who had acquired considerable knowledge in other branches of science; and to whose communications the captain was much indebted in writing his journal. A little island, which was seen at twelve leagues distance, soon after this worthy man breathed his last, was called by his name, to perpetuate his memory. Mr. Law, the surgeon of the Discovery, was then removed into the Resolution; and Mr. Samuel, the surgeon's first mate of the Resolution, was appointed surgeon of the Discovery.

The next day the continent of North America was again seen; which, by reckoning, was in lat. 64° 27′, long. 165° 42′ W. The land, which presented itself to view, was called Point Rodney, and a little island at no great distance was called Sledge Island, from a sledge, like those which are used by the Russians in Kamtschatka, to convey goods from place to place over the ice and snow, being found upon it. The construction of this sledge was admirable, all the parts being neatly put together, some with wooden pins, but mostly with thongs or lashings of whalebone. On the 6th an island was seen, of no great extent, which received the name of King's Island. Being satisfied that the main land seen was one continued coast, captain Cook tacked and stood away for the N.W., in which direction, the next day, he reached the western extremity of all America hitherto known, which he named Cape Prince of Wales, situated in lat. 65° 45′, long. 168° 5′ W. It was doubtful whether any people were visible there.

On the 9th, the ships resumed their course to the

westward, for the opposite coast of Asia, which they reached the next day, and came to anchor about two miles from the north shore, in a large bay, open to the eastward. Here a village was seen, and some people, who seemed to have been thrown into confusion or fear by the sight of the vessels. At this village captain Cook proposed to land; and accordingly went with three armed boats, accompanied by some of the officers. Thirty or forty men, each armed with a spontoon, a bow, and arrows, stood upon an eminence near the houses; three of them came down towards the shore, on the approach of the gentlemen, and were so polite as to pull off their caps, and make them low bows. Though this civility was returned, it did not inspire them with sufficient confidence to wait for the landing of our party; for the instant they put the boats ashore, the natives retired. Captain Cook followed them alone, without any thing in his hands, and by signs and gestures prevailed on them to stop and accept some trifling presents: in return for these, they gave him two fox skins, and a couple of sea-horse teeth. The captain was of opinion, that they had brought these articles with them for the purpose of presenting them to him, and that they would have given them to him even if they had expected no return.

They seemed very timid and cautious: intimating their desire by signs, that no more of the people should come up. On the captain's laying his hand on the shoulder of one of them, he started back several paces; in proportion as he advanced they retreated, always in the attitude of being ready to make use of their spears; while those on the eminence were ready to support them with their ar-

rows. Insensibly captain Cook and two or three of his companions introduced themselves among them. The distribution of a few beads among some of them soon created a degree of confidence, so that they were not alarmed when the captain was joined by a few more of his people; and, in a short time, a kind of traffic was entered into. In exchange for tobacco, knives, beads, and other articles, they gave a few arrows, and some of their clothing; but nothing could induce them to part with a spear or a bow. These they held in continual readiness, never quitting them, except at one time, when four or five persons laid theirs down, while they favoured the party with a song and a dance; and even then they placed them in such a manner, that they could lay hold of them in a moment.

Their arrows were pointed either with stone or bone, but very few of them had barbs, and some of them had a round blunt point. What use these are applied to is not known, unless it be to kill small animals without damaging the skin. Their bows were such as had been observed on the American coast: their spontoons, or spears, were of iron or steel, and of European or Asiatic workmanship; and considerable pains had been taken to embellish them with carving, and inlayings of brass, and a white metal. Those who stood with bows and arrows in their hands, had the spear slung by a leathern strap over their right shoulder. A leathern quiver slung over their right shoulder, served to contain arrows; and some of these quivers were exceedingly beautiful, being made of red leather, on which was very neat embroidery, and other ornaments. Several other things, and particularly their clothing, indicated a degree of ingenuity, far surpassing what

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

The Tschuktschi & their habitations.

any one could expect to find among so northern a people.

Their apparel consisted of a pair of breeches, a cap, a frock, a pair of boots, and a pair of gloves, all made of the skins of deer, dogs, seals, and other animals, and extremely well dressed; some with the hair or fur on, and others without it. The caps were made in such a manner, as to fit the head very close; and besides these caps, which were worn by most of them, our navigators procured from them some hoods, made of dog skins, that were sufficiently large to cover both head and shoulders.

The village was composed both of their winter and their summer habitations; the former are exactly like a vault, the floor of which is sunk below the surface of the earth. One of them which captain Cook examined, was of an oval figure, about twenty feet in length, and twelve or more in height; the framing consisted of wood, and the ribs of whales, judiciously disposed, and bound together with smaller materials of the same kind. Over this framing, a covering of strong coarse grass was laid, and that again was covered with earth; so that on the outside, the house had the appearance of a little hillock, supported by a wall of stone, of the height of three or four feet, which was built round the two sides and one end. At the other end of the habitation the earth was raised sloping, to walk up to the entrance, which was by a hole in the top of the roof over that end. The floor was boarded, and under it was a sort of cellar; at the end of each house was a vaulted room, which he supposed was a store-room. These store-rooms communicated by a dark passage with the house; and with the open air by a hole in the roof, even with the ground;

but they cannot be said to be entirely below ground, for one extended to the edge of the hill along which they were made, and which was built up with stone. Over it stood a kind of sentry-box or tower, formed of the large bones of great fish. Their summer huts were of a tolerable size, and circular, being brought to a point at the top; slight poles and bones, covered with the skins of sea animals, composed the framing. Captain Cook examined the inside of one: there was a fire-place just within the door, where a few wooden vessels were deposited, all very dirty. Their bed-places were close to the side, and occupied about one-half of the circuit: some degree of privacy seemed to be observed, for there were several partitions made with skins. The bed and bedding consisted of deer skins, and most of them were clean and dry. The canoes of these people are of the same kind with those of the northern Americans; some, both of the large and small sort, being seen lying in a creek near the village.

From the large bones of fish, and other sea animals, it appeared, that the sea furnished them with the greater part of their subsistence. The country seemed extremely barren, not a tree or shrub being to be seen. At some distance to the west was a ridge of mountains, covered with snow, that had fallen not long before.

All the Americans who had been before seen, were rather low of stature, with round chubby faces, and high cheek-bones; these people, on the contrary, had long visages, and were stout and well made, seeming to be a quite different nation; which does not serve to support the opinion, that America was first peopled from the peninsula of Asia. The people who inhabit this eastern extremity of Asia,

are called the Tschutski, and were visited by Beering in 1728.

After the party had remained with these people between two and three hours, they returned on board; and, soon after, the wind becoming southerly, proceeded to the north-east; the coasts of both continents being then in sight, and distant only thirteen leagues. On the 14th, the ships regained the American coast, which there formed a point, now named Point Mulgrave: steering north-east, several sea-horses were seen, and large flights of birds. On the 17th they had reached lat. 70° 33′, when a brightness in the northern horizon appeared, like that reflected from ice, and which is commonly called the blink; in an hour after, a large field of ice became visible, and entirely prevented the farther progress of the ships in that direction. Here were abundance of sea-horses, some in the water, but far more on the ice. On the 18th, the two ships were close to the edge of the ice, which was as compact as a wall, and seemed at least ten or twelve feet high; farther north it appeared much higher. Its surface was extremely rugged, and here and there pools of water were observed upon it. The depth of water, at this time, was from seven to nine fathoms. At this time, the weather, which had been hazy, cleared up a little, and land was seen extending from S. to S. E. by E., about three or four miles distant. As the eastern extreme point of land was much encumbered with ice, captain Cook gave it the name of Ivy Cape. This is doubtless a continuation of the American continent. The ships were then in a critical situation, being in shoal water, upon a lee shore, the main body of the ice to windward driving down upon them; but the wind

presently shifted to a more favourable point of the west, which on the 19th induced captain Cook to stand to the northward. The boats from each ship were now sent out to kill some sea-horses, which lay in prodigious numbers upon the ice. Nine were brought on board the Resolution, and eaten in preference to salt meat, although the lean flesh is coarse, black, and has rather a strong taste; one or two of the seamen on board, who had been to Greenland, declared that no one ever ate of these animals there. The heart, however, is said to be nearly as well tasted as that of a bullock. The fat, when melted, yielded a good deal of oil, which burned very well in lamps; and their hides, which are very thick, were very useful about the rigging. The teeth or tusks of most of them were then very small; even those of some of the largest and oldest of these animals did not exceed six inches in length: from whence it was concluded that they had lately shed their old teeth. One of these animals, of a moderate size, measured from the snout to the tail nine feet four inches, the circumference of the body at the shoulder was seven feet ten inches, and the carcase weighed, without the head, skin or entrails, 854lb. the head 41¼lb. and the skin 205lb. As there was nothing in the maws of those who were killed, what they fed upon could not be known. This is thought to be the same animal that is found in the gulf of St. Laurence, and there called Sea-cow. They lie in herds of many hundreds, upon the ice, huddled over the other like swine, and roar or bray very loud. Some of the herd were always upon the watch, and presently gave the alarm, though they were seldom in a hurry to get away till after they had been once fired at; then they would tumble one over

another into the sea, in the utmost confusion. They did not appear to be that dangerous animal some authors have described them, even when attacked. The female will defend her young one to the very last, and at the very expence of her own life, whether in the water or upon the ice; nor will the young one quit the dam, though she be dead.

Whilst the seamen were employed in attacking these animals, the ships were in a manner surrounded by the ice, so that the commander was obliged to stand to the southward; but the next day he resumed his northern course, though he could not long continue it. On the 21st the ice was found to cover a part of the sea, which but a few days before had been clear, and to extend further to the south than when it was first fallen in with. Captain Cook supposes that the whole of the ice was a moveable mass.

The next point of land on the American coast, which received a name, was Cape Lisbourne, lat. 69° 5′, long. 165° 18′ W. Quitting that coast, and proceeding to the westward, the water deepened gradually to twenty-eight fathoms, which was the greatest depth found in the North Sea. In the morning of the 26th, ice was again fallen in with, in lat. 63° 36′, long. 176°, which gave no better prospect of getting to the north in that meridian than nearer shore. Standing to the westward in the afternoon the ships were in a manner embayed in the ice; the next evening they were close in with the edge of the ice, which lay E. N. E. and W. N. W. as far each way as the eye could reach. There being little wind, captain Cook went with the boats to examine the state of the ice, and found it to consist of loose pieces of various kinds, so close together, that it was difficult to enter the outer edge

with a boat, and it was as impossible for the ships to enter it, as if it had been so many rocks. It was all pure transparent ice, except the upper surface, which was a little porous. It appeared to be all composed of frozen snow, and to have been all formed at sea. The pieces of ice, that composed the outer edge of the field, were from forty to fifty yards in extent to four or five, and captain Cook supposes the larger pieces to reach thirty feet or more from the surface of the water; and he is of opinion, that the sun has very little influence in reducing these great masses of ice, as in this climate it seldom shines out for more than a few hours at a time, and often is not seen for several days together. It is the wind, or rather the waves raised by the wind, that bring down the bulk of these enormous masses, by grinding one piece against another, and by undermining and washing away those parts that lie exposed to the surge of the sea. The number of sea-horses seen on the ice was incredible; and the seamen now beginning to relish them for food, boats were sent out to procure more.

On the 29th land was seen. It was perfectly destitute of wood, and even snow, but wore a brownish aspect, which was probably produced by a mossy substance which grew upon it. The extreme point of land seen was named Cape North, and beyond this the ships were unable to penetrate: it lies in lat. 68° 56′, long. 179° 9′ W. The coast beyond it must take a very westerly direction; for no land could be seen to the northward of it, though the horizon was there pretty clear. As the prospect of finding a passage into the Atlantic was now become very inconsiderable, and the season was far advanced, so that the time when the frost was expected to set in

was near at hand, our navigator confined his attention to the obtaining of some place where wood and water might be procured, and where he might pass the winter so as to make some improvements in geography and navigation, and at the same time be in a condition to return to the north, in farther search of a passage the ensuing summer.

If the result of lord Mulgrave's voyage toward the North Pole, in the year 1773, was unfavourable to the opinion entertained of the practicability of making advances in that region of ice, the voyage of captain Cook, in the year 1778, on the opposite side of the globe, was still more so; being very near eleven degrees short of the approach made by the former, and fully demonstrates the impossibility of navigating in high northern latitudes.

Captain Cook having relinquished any farther attempt to penetrate northward this year, bent his course south-eastward, along the coast of Asia; in which he was employed from the 29th of August to the 4th of September. In this direction an island, about four or five miles in circuit, and three leagues from the main, was seen, and called Burney's Island, from an officer of that name on board. On the 2d of September the ships passed the Eastern Cape, which had been visited on the 11th of August. It is a peninsula of considerable height, joined to the continent by a very low, and, to all appearance, narrow neck of land, distant from Cape Prince of Wales, on the American coast, thirteen leagues. From this cape the coast changes its direction, and trends south-west. On the 3d they reached St. Laurence's Bay. Proceeding onward, the coast taking a westernly direction toward the gulf of Anader, whither our navigator had no inclination

to follow it, he finally quitted the Asiatic coast, and steered to the eastward, until he arrived on the coast of America, being desirous to ascertain the extent of that coast, and whether it was one undivided continent, or partly composed of large and projecting islands. Having cast anchor in an inlet, lieutenant King was sent to examine the country, and to ascertain whether it was part of the American continent, or of an island. On his return he gave the most satisfactory information that it was a considerable inlet, terminated by a small river or creek, and surrounded by continental land. In honour of Sir Fletcher Norton, then Speaker of the House of Commons, to whom Mr. King was nearly related, captain Cook named this inlet Norton Sound. The bay in which they anchored is called by the natives Chacktoole. Being exposed to the south and southwest winds, the station is not secure nor desirable. By ascertaining this point, our navigator restored to the American continent, that space which Mr. Stæhlin, in his map, had occupied with his imaginary island of Alashka. Here the branches of spruce-trees were cut down to brew beer. The natives behaved with great civility, and exchanged fish for trifles, with great honour and regularity of dealing: iron was their beloved article; four knives, made out of an old iron hoop, procured near four hundred weight of fish. They were clothed in deer skins, made after the same manner as prevailed in Nootka or King George's Sound, and they had the under lips pierced, and fixed ornaments in them. A family of the natives came near to the place where a party from the ships were cutting wood; it consisted of a husband, wife, and infant child, and a fourth person, who bore the human form indeed, but was the

most deformed cripple ever beheld; the husband was almost blind. The teeth of both the man and woman were black, and seemed as if they had been filed down level with the gums. The man was about five feet two inches high, the woman was short and squat, with a plump round face; she was dressed in a deer skin jacket, with a large hood, and had on wide boots. Having staid here two days, captain Cook determined to proceed to the Sandwich Islands; but previous to this the American coast was to be searched for a supply of water. In sailing southward, two points of land, at no great distance from each other, received the names of Point Stephens, and Point Shallow-Water, on account of the depth of water there being from six to no more than four fathoms: on which account, as the coast could be no longer navigated with any degree of safety, it became highly expedient to quit it; so that to the southward of this last point, which lies in the latitude of 63 degrees, to Shoal-Ness, in latitude 60 degrees, the coast remains entirely unexplored. Probably it is accessible only to boats, or very small vessels. From the mast-head, the sea appeared to be chequered with shoals; the water was very much discoloured and muddy, and considerably fresher than at any of the places where the ships had lately anchored; which renders it probable, that a considerable river runs into the sea in this unknown part.

On the 20th of September a pretty large island was seen, and soon after another smaller one a little to the eastward; these were named Clerke's Islands, latitude 63° 15′, longitude 169° 30′ W. As no harbour could be found on the northern coast, our navigator quitted it, and proceeded S. S.W. in search of land which had been seen on the 29th of July,

and which was now fallen in with on the 23d of September. It is an island thirty miles in extent, in the direction of north-west and south-east, the south-east end being Cape Upright, before-named. As this spot appeared to be entirely unknown to the Russians, captain Cook laid claim to it as a new discovery, and named it Gore's Island: it appeared to be uninhabited. Clerke's Islands, which were afterwards found to be not wholly unknown to the Russians, were well peopled.

After quitting this island, captain Cook steered south-east by south, for Samganoodha, the harbour in which the ships had before anchored on the island of Oonalashka. In proceeding thither, the Resolution sprung a leak, to keep under which a pump was constantly employed: they arrived on the 2d of October. The natives immediately repaired to the ships, bringing dried salmon and other fish, which they exchanged with the seamen for tobacco, among whom the whole remaining stock on board both ships had been distributed only a few days before; and the quantity was not half sufficient to answer their demands, notwithstanding this, so improvident a creature is an English sailor, the men were as profuse in making their bargains, as if they had now arrived at the port of Virginia; by which means, in less than forty-eight hours, the value of this article of barter was lowered above a thousand per cent. If there were at this time any seeds of the scurvy among the crews of either ships, the berries which were gathered on this island, and the spruce-beer, which was served for drink every day, effectually eradicated them. The halibut caught here were excellent, and there were few on board who did not prefer them to salmon. Eight or ten

of these fish were generally caught each day; these were sufficient to serve the people of both ships; one of those which were caught weighed two hundred and fifty-four pounds. On this island some Russians were met with, who had a dwelling-house, some store-houses, and a sloop of about thirty tons burden: their business was to procure skins, which they sent to Kamtschatka. The principal factor was named Erasim Gregorioff Sin Ismyloff; he showed to captain Cook two charts, containing the discoveries of the Russians in those seas; in one of which the islands dispersed between the 52d and 55th degrees of latitude, in the space between Kamtschatka and America, were laid down; but he assured the captain, from his own knowledge, that they were not well ascertained, either with respect to their number or situation; one-third of them he struck out, declaring they had no existence.

Captain Cook enumerates these islands, beginning with those which lie nearest to Kamtschatka, viz. Beering's Island; Maidenoi Ostroff, or the Copper Island, ten leagues from the former, in the direction of E. by S. or E. S. E.; Atakou, about eighteen leagues in extent, in the direction of E. and W. named by Beering, Mount St. John: two inconsiderable islands lie three or four leagues from the east end of it: a group of six or more islands were placed nearer to the eastward, two of which, Atghka and Amluk, are tolerably large. A cluster of ten small islands, which was laid down in Muller's chart, were struck out, and two other islands lying near to Oonalashka, in lieu of which an island called Amoghta was put down. As the islands in this archipelago lie nearly under the same parallels, different navigators, being misled by their different

reckonings, easily mistook one group of islands for another; and being well inclined to favour the mistake, flattered themselves that they had discovered new spots of ground, when they had only found old ones in a different position from that assigned to them by their visitors.

According to Ismyloff's chart, a passage was traced from the projecting point of land, called Alaska, northward into Bristol Bay, converting fifteen leagues of the coast which captain Cook had supposed to belong to the continent, into an island, distinguished by the name of Oonemak; "Which passage," says our navigator, "might easily escape us, as we were informed that it is very narrow, shallow, and only to be navigated through with boats, or very small vessels." In this instance, and in this only, our great discoverer stands indebted to the Russians for a correction of a slight error, into which he had fallen with respect to the delineation of the western coast of North America; but it is to him that mankind will ever remain indebted for the knowledge now acquired of that part of the world, which, until he visited it, was altogether unknown; and it has been well remarked, that "the fictions of speculative geographers in the southern hemisphere have been continents, in the northern hemisphere they have been seas. If captain Cook, in his second voyage annihilated imaginary southern lands, he has made amends in his third voyage, by annihilating northern seas, and filling up the vast space which had been allotted to them with the solid contents of the new discoveries of American land, farther west and north than had hitherto been traced."

By the information of the Russian superintend-

ent, it appeared that his countrymen had made several attempts to gain a footing upon that part of the American continent which lies contiguous to Oonalashka, and the adjoining islands, but were always repulsed by the natives, whom they described as a very treacherous people: they mentioned two or three captains, or chief men, who had been murdered by them, and some of the Russians showed wounds which they said they had received there.

Mr. Ismyloff took leave of captain Cook on the 21st of October, and was entrusted with a letter from that officer to the lords commissioners of the admiralty, in which was inclosed a chart of the northern coast which had been visited. In return, that gentleman gave our commander a letter to major Behm, governor of Kamtschatka, who resided at Bolcheretsk, and another to the commanding officer at the town of St. Peter and St. Paul. Captain Cook describes this Russian, as possessing abilities which might entitle him to a higher station in life than that in which he found him; he was tolerably well versed in astronomy, and in the most useful branches of the mathematics. The captain made him a present of a Hadley's octant; and, though probably it was the first he had ever seen, he made himself acquainted, in a very short time, with most of the uses to which the instrument can be applied. There are Russians settled on all the principal islands between Oonalashka and Kamtschatka, for the sole purpose of collecting furs: the great object is the sea-beaver or otter. All these furriers are relieved from time to time by others; those who were met with had arrived from Okostsk in the year 1776, and were to return in the year 1781.

The native inhabitants are, to all appearance, the

most peaceable and inoffensive people imaginable, and in point of honesty might serve as a pattern to the most civilized nation upon earth; but this good quality, captain Cook thinks, has been acquired by their present state of subjection to the Russians, rather than resulting from their natural disposition. The greatest harmony was found to subsist between the two nations. The natives have their own chiefs in each island, and seem to enjoy their liberty and property unmolested; but no such thing as an offensive or even a defensive weapon was seen among them, so that is most probable the Russians have disarmed them: nor were any canoes seen which belonged to the natives.

Captain Cook was once present when the chief of Oonalashka made his dinner upon the raw head of a large halibut just caught. Before any was given to the chief, two of his servants ate the gills, without any dressing besides squeezing out the slime; this done, one of them cut off the head of the fish, took it to the sea, and washed it, then came with it, and sat down by the chief, first pulling up some grass, upon a part of which the head was laid, and the rest was strewed before the chief: he then cut large pieces of the cheek, and laid them within the reach of the great man, who swallowed them with as much satisfaction as we should do raw oysters. When he had done, the remains of the head was cut in pieces, and given to the attendants, who tore off the meat with their teeth, and gnawed the bones like so many dogs.

Their houses are lighted, as well as heated, by lamps, which are simple, and yet answer the purpose very well. They are made of a flat stone, hollowed on one side, like a plate, and about the same

size, or rather larger. In the hollow part they put the oil, mixed with a little dry grass, which serves the purpose of a wick. Both men and women frequently warm their bodies over one of these lamps, by placing it between their legs, under their garments, and sitting over it for a few minutes.

It is a little extraordinary that penguins, which are common in many parts of the world, should not be found in this sea. Albatrosses too are so very scarce, that it should seem this is not their proper climate. "The learned tell us," says captain Cook, "that the seeds of plants are by various means conveyed from one part of the world to another; even to islands in the midst of great oceans, and far remote from any other land—how comes it to pass that there are no trees growing on this part of the continent of America, nor any of the islands lying near it? They are certainly as well situated for receiving seeds, by all the various ways I have heard of, as any of those coasts which abound in wood. May not nature have denied to some soils the power of raising trees, without the assistance of art? As to the drift-wood upon the shores of the islands, I have no doubt that it comes from America. For although there may be none on the neighbouring coast, enough may grow farther up the country, which torrents in the spring may break loose, and bring down to the sea; and not a little may be conveyed from the woody coasts, though they lie at a greater distance."

The Russians declared that they never had any connections with the women of this island, because they were not Christians; "our people," says captain Cook, "were not so scrupulous; and some of them had reason to repent that the females of

Oonalashka encouraged their addresses without any reserve, for their health suffered by a distemper which is not unknown here." The natives of this island are also subject to cancers, or a complaint like it, which those whom it attacks are very careful to conceal. They do not seem to be long-lived. Captain Cook no where saw a person, either man or woman, whom he could suppose to be sixty years of age. Probably their hard way of living may be the means of shortening their days.

On the 26th of October the ships put to sea from the harbour of Samganoodha, the commander intending to proceed to the Sandwich Islands, there to spend a few of the winter months, in case the necessary refreshments could be procured, and then to direct his course to Kamtschatka, so as to endeavour to reach it by the middle of May the ensuing summer. From the 27th of October to the 3d of November, the two ships suffered much by tempests, in which a man was killed on board the Discovery by the main-tack giving way, at the same time the boatswain and two or three of the men were wounded. On the 26th of November the Sandwich Islands came in view. The north-western part of this group only had been visited in the beginning of this year; our navigator now fell in with the island nearly in the centre, which was called by the natives Mowee. From hence several canoes came off, in one of which was a chief named Terreeoboo. Some pigs and a little fruit were procured, but without casting anchor. The ships proceeded, on the 1st of December, to a larger island to the windward, called Owhyhee; the summits of the mountains of which, though not of any extraordinary height, were seen to be covered with snow

to a considerable depth, which appeared to have lain there for some time. Here a quantity of sugar-cane was procured, a strong decoction of which was brewed, and produced a very palatable beer; but when delivered out to the men, none of the crew belonging to the Resolution would taste it. As there happened to be some hops on board, they were made use of, and greatly improved the beverage. The captain and officers drank this sugar-cane beer, which, though very wholesome, the crew objected to as injurious to their health. On the same ground they had refused to drink the spruce-beer which had been made on their first arrival at King George's Sound. The ships continued to ply on the eastern and southern coast, till the 17th of January, 1779, in order to procure refreshments on better terms; very strict rules, with respect to the method of carrying on trade, having been established from the first. Sometimes not less than a thousand canoes were about the ships, and plenty of provisions were brought out, particularly pigs; but the natives understood trading as well as most people; and, rather than dispose of their commodities for less than they thought they were worth, would take them on shore again. A considerable quantity of very good salt was procured. Many women came on board, and their behaviour was so totally free from reserve, that they seemed to visit for no other purpose than to make a surrender of their persons.

At length the master of the Resolution (Mr. Bligh) being sent out in a boat, found a bay in which was good anchorage, and fresh water; into this harbour captain Cook resolved to carry the ships, for the purpose of refitting them. It is situated

on the west side of the island, in a district of land which the natives denominated Karakakooa. Here the ships cast anchor on the 17th of January.

One of the last minutes made by captain Cook in his journal, contains a high commendation of the conduct of these Indians, whilst the ships were plying off their coast; on which occasion he expresses himself as follows: "I had never met with a behaviour so free from reserve and suspicion, in my intercourse with any tribes of savages, as we experienced in the people of this island: it was very common for them to send up into the ship the several articles they brought off for barter, afterwards they would come in themselves, and make their bargain on the quarter-deck. The people of Otaheite, even after our repeated visits, did not care to put so much confidence in us: I infer from this, that those of Owhyhee must be more faithful in their dealings with one another than the inhabitants of Otaheite are; for if little faith were observed among themselves, they would not be so ready to trust strangers." One of the first remarks of our author's continuator, Mr. King, respects the alteration of conduct in the natives, as soon as the ships were in harbour. The immense crowd of islanders which blocked up every part of the ships, not only afforded opportunity of pilfering, without risk of discovery, but furnished the means of escaping with impunity in case of detection; and there was reason to conclude that their chiefs encouraged them in their thefts, for the booty was generally traced to the possession of some man of consequence. Indeed the inhabitants came off in such astonishing numbers, that the sides, decks and rigging, of both ships were soon completely covered with them;

and a multitude of women and boys, who had not been able to get canoes, came swimming round the ships in shoals, many of whom not finding room on board, remained the whole day playing in the water. In order to go through the necessary duties of the ship, the officers were obliged, almost every hour, to clear the vessel of the concourse of people, particularly women, that continued to flock thither. On these occasions, two or three hundred women were frequently made to jump into the water at once, where they continued swimming and playing about till they could again procure admittance, to the no small amusement of those on board.

The respect and veneration which was paid to Captain Cook, on his landing, exceeded any thing which he had before received, either in this or any former voyage. The natives distinguished him by the name of Orono, and although the precise meaning of the title could not be learned, yet it was unquestionable that they meant it as the highest possible mark of respect. Sometimes they applied it to an invisible being, who, they said, lived in the heavens; it was found also to be a title belonging to a personage of great rank and power in the island, who resembled very much the Delai Lama of the Tartars, and the ecclesiastical emperor of Japan. This appellation was soon followed by a ceremony, of which although the full meaning could not be obtained, was highly expressive of the exalted notions which were entertained of our commander. Mr. King considers it as an apotheosis. On this occasion an old chief, named Kaoo, performed the principal part. The natives, whose language bore so close an affinity to that of the southern islands as to be tolerably well understood,

described him as having been a priest, and in his youth a distinguished warrior; but the respect in which he was held did not proceed from his personal accomplishments, for he was a little old man, exhibiting an emaciated figure, his eyes exceedingly sore and red, and his body covered with a white leprous scurf, the effects of an immoderate use of the ava, or intoxicating liquor. After several ceremonies before a number of images, and gratifying the captain's sense of smelling with the effluvia of a dead and putrid hog, which Kaoo held for some time near his nose, many long orations, and much chaunting, in which the principal performer was assisted by a young man named Kaireekeea, who appeared to be likewise a man of the first consequence, the person to whom all these honours were paid, and Mr. King, who was seated by his side, were entertained with a repast of a baked hog, which had been brought in alive, killed and baked, during the performance of these rites, so that they could fill up no small space of time. This barbecue was cut up, and the captain, as well as his companion, was fed by that chief who sat next to each. None less than Kaoo could do these honours for the principal guest; and, still farther to testify his respect, the old man first chewed the meat which he put into the other's mouth; but loathsome and disgusting as it was, captain Cook treated it with as much painful complaisance as a man in that situation was capable of showing. During this ceremony, the principal image which was addressed had a quantity of red cloth thrown over it; and the captain was clad, by the hands of Kaoo, in a garment of the same sort.

It was soon found, that in the neighbourhood of

this bay a number of men resided, respectable for their decent and venerable deportment, forming a society detached and secluded from the rest of the community. They seemed to bear the character of the priesthood, and to maintain great authority over the people. The regular attendance of this order at the adjoining Morai excited the curiosity of captain Cook to be better acquainted with such a fraternity; for which purpose he paid this Indian cloister a visit, and was treated in a manner expressive of the highest respect which the custom of the country could testify. From that time, whilst the ships continued in the bay, whenever captain Cook went on shore he was attended by one of these priests, who went before him, giving notice that the Orono had landed, and ordering the people to prostrate themselves. One of the same body also constantly accompanied him on the water, standing in the bow of the boat with a wand in his hand, and giving notice of his approach to the natives who were in the canoes; on which they immediately left off paddling, and laid down on their faces, till he had passed. Some of the inferior chiefs frequently requested to be permitted to make an offering to the Orono: when this was granted, they presented a hog, generally with evident marks of fear in their countenances; Kaireekeea all the time chanting their accustomed hymns. The party on shore received every day a supply of hogs and vegetables more than sufficient for their subsistence, and several canoes, loaded with provisions, were sent to the ships with the same punctuality: no return was ever demanded, or even hinted at in the most distant manner. These presents were made with a regularity more like the discharge of a religious

duty than the effect of mere liberality; and when inquiry was made at whose charge all this munificence was displayed, they were told that it was at the expence of a great man called Kaoo, the chief of the priests, and grandfather to Kaireekeea; and that he was at that time absent attending the king of the island. No cardinal or archbishop could have given a stronger proof of the efficacy of his sacred character in meliorating the heart, than was shown by this simple child of nature, this high-priest of Owhyhee! The kind offices of these religionists indeed preceded captain Cook's visit to them; for when the observatory was to be fixed on shore, as soon as a piece of ground was pitched upon, the priests, to prevent the intrusion of the natives, consecrated the place, by fixing their wands round the wall by which it was inclosed: which sort of religious interdiction they, like the southern islanders, call taboo; a word very often repeated by these islanders, and of powerful and extensive operation. The men, when requested, would come across the field with provisions; but no persuasions could induce the women to approach within the taboo'd space.

On the 25th of January, the king of the island, named Terreeoboo, and who had visited our commander whilst the ships lay off the island of Mowee, arrived at the bay: he was an emaciated old man, but his heart was truly princely. On his first arrival he paid a private visit to captain Cook on board, attended only by one canoe, in which were his wife and children. The next day he visited the ships in great state, seated in a large canoe, and followed by two others. He was attended by his chiefs, who were dressed in their richest feathered cloaks and

helmets, and armed with long spears and daggers. In the second canoe came the venerable Kaoo, the chief of the priests, and his brethren, with their idols wrapped in red cloth. These idols were busts of gigantic size, made of wicker-work, and curiously covered with small feathers of various colours, wrought in the same manner as upon their cloaks. Their eyes were formed of large pearl-oysters, with a black nut fixed in the centre; their mouths with a double row of the fangs of dogs, to represent teeth, and, together with the rest of their features, were strangely distorted. The third canoe was filled with hogs, and various sorts of vegetables. As they advanced, the priests in the centre canoe sang their hymns with great solemnity, and after paddling round the ships, instead of going on board, as was expected, they made towards the shore at the beach, where they were stationed. When the king quitted the ships our commander attended him on shore. As soon as he was seated in the royal tent, the king rose up, and, in a very graceful manner, threw over the captain's shoulders the cloak he himself wore, put a feathered helmet on his head, and a curious fan into his hand; he also spread at his feet five or six other cloaks, all exceedingly beautiful, and of the greatest value. His attendants then brought four very large hogs, with sugar-canes, cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit; and before the company parted, the king exchanged names with his guest, which, amongst all the islanders of the Pacific Ocean, is esteemed the strongest pledge of friendship.

The beginning of February the ships prepared to sail. On telling the king that they should leave the island the next day but one, the gentlemen

observed, that a sort of proclamation was made immediately through the villages, requiring the people to bring in their hogs and vegetables, for the king to present to the Orono on his departure. On the 3d of February, being the day previous to their departure, Terreeoboo invited captain Cook and Mr. King to attend him to the place where Kaoo resided. On their arrival they found the ground covered with parcels of cloth, a vast quantity of red and yellow feathers tied to the fibres of cocoa-nut husks, and a great number of hatchets, and other pieces of iron ware, which had been got in barter from the ships. At a little distance from these lay an immense quantity of vegetables of every kind, and near them was a large herd of hogs. These, they were informed by Kaireekea, were a gift or tribute from the people of that district to the king; who selected about a third part of the iron ware, the same proportion of feathers, and a few pieces of cloth. These were put aside by themselves; and the remainder of the cloth, together with all the hogs and vegetables, were afterwards presented to captain Cook and Mr. King, who were astonished at the value and magnitude of these presents, which far exceeded every thing of the kind which they had seen either at the Friendly or Society Islands. They were immediately carried on board in boats; the large hogs were picked out to be salted for sea-stores, and upwards of thirty pigs and the vegetables were divided between the two crews. Such was the earnest solicitude which the natives showed for lieutenant King to remain on the island with them, that Terreeoboo and Kaoo waited upon captain Cook, whose son they supposed the lieutenant to be, with a formal request that he might be left

behind. The captain, to avoid giving a positive refusal to an offer so kindly meant, told them, that he could not part with Mr. King at that time, but that he should return to the island next year, and would then endeavour to settle the matter to their satisfaction.

A large party of gentlemen from both ships, having agreed to make an excursion up the country, to examine its natural productions, the beneficent Kaoo no sooner heard of it, than he sent an abundant supply of provisions after them, together with orders that the inhabitants of the country through which they were to pass, should give them every assistance in their power; and, to complete the delicacy and disinterestedness of his conduct, even the people he employed could not be prevailed on to accept the smallest present!—Who would have thought of finding all the refined liberality of a Timon, the true manner of giving, as well as the heart to give; on a secluded and rude spot, rising from the centre of an ocean which embraces nearly half the globe!

Whilst the ships continued in Karakakooa Bay, the natives entertained the gentlemen with a boxing-match; but these games were much inferior, as well in point of solemnity and magnificence, as in the skill and powers of the combatants, to what had been exhibited in the Friendly Islands. Here a seaman of the gunner's crew, named William Watman, died. He was an old man, had formerly served as a marine twenty-one years; and had entered as a seaman on board the Resolution, in the year 1772, served in that voyage towards the South Pole, was admitted into Greenwich Hospital on his return, which he quitted to serve his old master on

the present expedition. He died of a paralytic stroke, and was buried on the morai. When the grave began to be filled up, old Kaoo and his brethren approached it with great reverence, threw in a dead pig, some cocoa-nuts, and plantains. For three nights afterwards they surrounded it, sacrificing hogs, and performing their usual ceremonies of hymns and prayers, until day-break.

The behaviour of the warrior chiefs was not indeed so perfectly generous and disinterested, in every instance, as that of the priests. One of them, in particular, was detected in practising very mean impositions; but the only material injury which our navigators sustained from the natives of this island was, that some of their most expert swimmers were one day discovered under the ships, drawing out the filling nails of the sheathing, which they performed very dexterously by means of a short stick with a flint stone fixed in the end of it. To put a stop to this practice, which endangered the very existence of the vessels, some small shot were fired at the offenders, but they easily got out of their reach, by diving under the ship's bottom; it was therefore thought necessary to make an example, by flogging one of them on board the Discovery.

On the 4th of February, 1779, early in the morning, the two ships unmoored, and sailed out of the bay. On quitting this agreeable spot, captain Cook must have felt the highest possible satisfaction. He had now added to his other valuable discoveries, a group of very fine islands, rich in productions, peopled by a race of men possessing many valuable qualities, and strongly impressed with reverence and esteem; although not a single instance had oc-

curred, in which the life of one individual native was sacrificed as an example to the rest, and to impress them with such apprehensions as should check the propensity to commit outrages, and serve to preserve order. Indeed, throughout a voyage which had now continued two years and seven months, we do not find, in the account given of it by captain Cook, or in that of Ellis, that so much as a single Indian had been killed by the order, or with the privity, of the commander of the expedition; and the only instance given, in that long navigation, of a man being killed, was by a party sent on shore at Atooi, from the Resolution, and commanded by a lieutenant. To a man of humanity, as captain Cook had ever shown himself to be, the effecting such discoveries, without being compelled to exercise acts of severity, must yield the most heart-felt satisfaction. The dangers to which they had been exposed during the voyage, had, in some instances, been imminent, but they had ever been transient, and frequently undiscovered until passed. Their hardships and sufferings too had been much fewer, and less severe, than on any other voyage which had been undertaken for the purpose of discovery. This great man might be considered as having accomplished every object for which he was sent out, as there was scarce a possibility that a second expedition into the North Sea would be more successful than that which had been already made. So universal, we may say, had been the researches of this renowned navigator, as to enable him to rest assured, that the fame which he had acquired, of being the greatest navigator the world ever saw, could not possibly be in any respect lessened or obscured by any similar atchievements, which might

be performed in any future age; an assurance, which can scarcely belong to the most distinguished display of abilities among the moderns, in any possible walk of excellence. Taking all these considerations into the account, we may form some idea what were the feelings of our fortunate as well as able commander, when sailing out of the harbour of Karakakooa, to complete his survey of the Sandwich Islands, and then to proceed to Kamtschatka. A disciple of Solon would maintain, that having reached the apex of his character, then was the moment in which he should wish to die.

Very hard gales of wind attacked the ships for several days after sailing from this harbour; and on the 8th the foremast of the Resolution was discovered again to have given way, the fishes which were put on the head in King George's or Nootka Sound, on the coast of America, being sprung, and the parts so very defective, as to make it absolutely necessary to replace them, and of course to unstep the mast. The sails also had sustained great damage. It therefore became absolutely necessary to carry the ships into some harbour. For a while our navigator remained undetermined whether he should seek out some other more eligible retreat, on the northward of Owhyhee (from which island he had not stretched out far) or return to his former station: at length he determined on the latter, and the two ships cast anchor on the very spot which they had quitted seven days before.

The whole of the 11th, and part of the 12th of February, was occupied in getting out the foremast, and conveying it on shore. Not only the head of the mast had sustained damage, but the heel was become exceedingly rotten, having a very large

hole in the middle of it. Several days being probably required to make the necessary repairs, Messrs. King and Baily got the observatory on shore, and pitched their tents on the morai, guarded by a corporal and six marines. A friendly intercourse was renewed with the priests, who, for our greater security, tabooed the place with their wands as before. The sail-makers also repaired to the shore, to repair the damages in their department, sustained by the late heavy gales. They occupied a habitation lent us by the priests, adjoining to the morai.

This speedy return of the ships seemed to alarm the natives; but the king soon repaired to the shore, visited his friend, and every thing seemed to be restored to its former footing, until the evening of the 13th, when the officer, who commanded the watering-party of the Discovery, reported to captain Cook, that several chiefs had assembled at the well near the beach, driving away the natives whom he had hired to assist the sailors in rolling down the casks to the shore; but this hostile appearance subsided on lieutenant King's interposition, who received orders from captain Cook, that if the natives began to throw stones, or behaved insolently, a musket loaded with ball should be fired at the offenders: in consequence of which, orders were issued to the corporal of marines to have the pieces of the centinels loaded with ball, instead of small shot. Presently after, a continual fire of muskets was heard from the Discovery, which was observed to be directed at a canoe, that was paddling towards the shore in great haste, and pursued by one of the ship's small boats. This firing was considered to be the consequence of some theft, and captain Cook

ordered Mr. King to follow him with a marine armed, and to endeavour to seize the people as they landed. They accordingly ran to the place where the canoe was expected to come ashore, but did not arrive in time; the people having quitted it, and fled to the country before their arrival. At this time they did not know, that the goods had been already restored; and thinking it probable, from what they had observed, that they might be of importance, they did not choose to relinquish their endeavours to recover them; and, having inquired of the natives what course the people had taken, they pursued them till it was almost dark, when they supposed themselves to be about three miles from the tents; and, thinking that the islanders amused them with false information in their pursuit, they gave up the search, and returned.

A difference of a more serious nature had happened in their absence. The officer, who had been dispatched in the small boat after the thieves, and who was returning on board, with the booty that had been restored, seeing captain Cook and Mr. King engaged in the pursuit of the offenders, seized a canoe, which was drawn up on the shore. This canoe unfortunately belonged to Pareea, who, at that instant arriving from on board the Discovery, claimed his property, and protested his innocence. The officer persisted in detaining it, in which he was encouraged by the crew of the pinnace, then waiting for captain Cook; in consequence of which a scuffle ensued, and Pareea was knocked down by a violent blow on the head with an oar. Several of the natives, who had hitherto been peaceable spectators, began now to attack the people with such a shower of stones, that they were forced to a preci-

pitate retreat, and swam off to a rock, at a considerable distance from the shore. The pinnace was plundered immediately by the natives, and would have been entirely demolished, if Pareea had not interposed; who had not only recovered from his blow, but had also forgot it at the same instant. He ordered the crowd to disperse, and beckoned to come and take possession of the pinnace; and afterwards assured them, that he would use his influence to get the things restored which had been taken out of it. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, carrying them a midshipman's cap, and some other articles of the plunder; and, expressing much concern at what had happened, begged to know if the Orono would kill him, and whether he might be permitted to come on board the next day? He was assured, that he would be well received, and therefore joined noses with the officers, (their usual token of friendship,) and paddled over to Kowrowa.

Captain Cook, when these particulars were represented to him, was exceedingly concerned; and, when he and Mr. King were returning on board, he expressed his fears that these islanders would oblige him to pursue violent measures; adding, they must not be permitted to suppose, that they had gained an advantage over us. It was then, however, too late to take any steps that evening; he therefore only gave orders, that every islander should be immediately turned out of the ship. This order being executed, Mr. King returned on shore; and the events of the day having much abated their former confidence in the natives, a double guard was posted on the morai, with orders to let Mr. King know, if any men were seen lurking about

the beach. At eleven o'clock, five of the natives were seen creeping round the bottom of the morai; they approached with great caution, and, at last, perceiving they were discovered, immediately retired out of sight. About midnight one of them ventured himself near the observatory, when a centinel fired over him; on which they all fled, and we had no farther disturbance during the remainder of the night.

At day-light the next morning, Mr. King went on board the Resolution, in order to get the time-keeper; and in his way thither was hailed by the Discovery, and received information that their cutter had some time in the night been stolen from the buoy, where it had been moored.

On Mr. King's arrival on board, he found the marines were arming themselves, and captain Cook busied in loading his double barrelled gun. Whilst he was acquainting him with what happened in the night at the morai, he eagerly interrupted him, and informed him of the loss of the Discovery's cutter, and of the preparations he was making to recover it. It was his usual practice, in all the islands of this ocean, when any thing of consequence had been stolen from him, by some stratagem, to get the king, or some of the principal Erees, on board, where he detained them as hostages till the property was restored. This method having hitherto proved successful, he meant to adopt it on the present occasion; and gave orders to stop every canoe, that should attempt to leave the bay; resolving to seize and destroy them, if the cutter could not be recovered by peaceable means. In pursuance of this, the boats of both ships, properly manned and armed, were stationed across the bay; and before Mr. King

quitted the ship, some great guns were fired at two canoes, that were attempting to escape.

Between seven and eight o'clock captain Cook and Mr. King quitted the ship together; the former in the pinnace, with Mr. Phillips, and nine marines; and the latter in the small boat. The last orders Mr. King received from captain Cook were, to quiet the minds of the natives on his side of the bay, by the strongest assurances that they should not be injured; to keep his people together, and to be continually on his guard. Captain Cook and Mr. King then separated; the captain going towards Kowrowa, where Terreeoboo resided; and Mr. King proceeded to the beach: his first business, when he arrived on shore, was to issue strict orders to the marines to continue within the tent, to charge their muskets with ball, and not on any consideration to quit their arms. He then attended old Kaoo and the priests, at their respective huts, and explained to them, as well as he was able, the reason of the hostile preparations, which had so exceedingly alarmed them. He found they were no strangers to the circumstance of the cutter's being stolen, and assured them, that though the commodore was not only resolved to recover it, but also to punish, in the most exemplary manner, the authors of the theft; yet that they, and all the inhabitants of the village, on their side of the bay, had not the least occasion to be alarmed, or to apprehend the least danger. He importuned the priests to communicate this to the people, and intreat them not to entertain an idea of fear, but to continue peaceable and quiet. Kaoo interrupted Mr. King, with great emotion, if any harm was to happen to Terreeoboo? He assured him there was not; and

both he and his brethren appeared much satisfied with this assurance.

Captain Cook having in the mean time called off the launch, from the north point of the bay, and taken it with him, landed at Kowrowa, with the lieutenant and nine marines. He proceeded immediately into the village, where he was respectfully received; the people, as usual, prostrating themselves before him, and making their accustomed offerings of small hogs. Perceiving that his design was not suspected, his next step was, to inquire for the king, and the two boys, his sons, who had been almost continually his guests on board the Resolution. The boys presently returned with the natives, who had been searching for them, and immediately conducted captain Cook to the habitation where Terreeoboo had slept. The old man had just awoke; and, after some conversation respecting the loss of the cutter, from which captain Cook was convinced that he was not in any wise privy to it, he invited him to accompany him, and spend the day on board the Resolution. The king accepted the invitation, and arose immediately to accompany him.

Every thing had now a prosperous appearance; the two boys were already in the pinnace, and the rest of the party approaching the water side, when a woman, named Kanee-kabareea, the mother of the boys, and one of Terreeoboo's favourite wives, followed him, beseeching him, with tears and intreaties, not to venture to go on board. Two chiefs, who came with her, took hold of him, and insisting he should proceed no farther, obliged him to sit down. The islanders, now collecting in vast numbers along the shore, who had probably been alarmed by the discharging of the great guns, and the hos-

tile appearance in the bay, gathered together round captain Cook and Terreeoboo. Thus situated, the lieutenant of marines, perceiving that his men were huddled together in the crowd, and consequently unable to use their arms, if there should appear to be a necessity for it, proposed to captain Cook, to draw them up along the rocks, close to the edge of the water. The populace making way for them to pass, the lieutenant drew them up in a line, within about thirty yards of the place where Terreeoboo was sitting. The old king continued all this time on the ground, bearing the most visible marks of terror and dejection in his countenance. Captain Cook, unwilling to abandon the object which occasioned him to come on shore, urged him most earnestly to proceed; whilst, on the other hand, if the king expressed any inclination to follow him, the chiefs, who surrounded him, interposed; at first they had recourse to prayers and intreaties, but afterwards to force and violence, and even insisted on his remaining on shore. Captain Cook, at length perceiving that the alarm had spread too generally, and that there was not a probability of getting him off without much bloodshed, gave up the point; at the same time observing to Mr. Phillips, that, to compel him to go on board, would probably occasion the loss of many of the lives of the inhabitants.

Notwithstanding this enterprize had now failed, and was abandoned by captain Cook, yet it did not appear that his person was in the least degree of danger, till an accident happened, which occasioned a fatal turn to the affair. The boats, stationed across the bay, having fired at some canoes, for attempting to get out, unfortunately had killed one

of their chiefs. Intelligence of his death arrived at the village where captain Cook then was, just as he had parted from the king, and was proceeding with great deliberation towards the shore. The ferment it immediately occasioned was but too conspicuous; the women and children were sent away, and the men were soon clad in their war-mats, and armed with spears and stones. One of the natives, having provided himself with a stone, and a long iron spike, (called by the natives a pahooa) advanced towards the captain, flourishing his weapon in defiance, and threatening to throw the stone. The captain requested him to desist; but the islander repeating his menaces, he was highly provoked, and fired a load of small shot at him. The man was shielded in his war mat, which the shot could not penetrate; his firing, therefore, served only to irritate and encourage them. Vollies of stones were thrown at the marines; and one of the Erees attempted the life of Mr. Phillips with his pahooa; but, not succeeding in the attempt, he received from him a blow with the butt end of his piece. Captain Cook immediately discharged his second barrel, loaded with ball, and killed one of the most violent of the assailants. A general attack with stones succeeded, which was followed, on our part, by a discharge of musquetry, not only from the marines, but also from the people in the boats. The natives, to our great astonishment, received our fire with great firmness; and, without giving time for the marines to charge again, they rushed in upon them with dreadful shouts and yells. What followed was a scene of horror and confusion, which can more easily be conceived than properly related. Four of the marines retreated among the rocks,

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

The Death of Captain Cook.

Dublin Published by J. Cooke 5 Bow Lane

and fell a sacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three others were dangerously wounded; and the lieutenant stabbed between the shoulders with a pahooa; but having fortunately reserved his fire, shot the man from whom he had received the wound, at the instant he was preparing to repeat his blow. The last time the unfortunate captain Cook was distinctly seen, he was standing at the water's edge, and ordering the boats to cease firing, and pull in.

It was imagined by some of those who were present, that the marines, and those who were in the boats, fired without captain Cook's orders, and that he was anxious to prevent the further effusion of blood; it is therefore probable, that, on this occasion, his humanity proved fatal to him: for it was observed, that while he faced the natives no violence had been offered him; but, when he turned about, to give directions to the boats, he was stabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water. A general shout was set up by the islanders on seeing him fall, and his body was dragged inhumanly on shore, where he was surrounded by the enemy, who snatching the dagger from each other's hands, displayed a savage eagerness to join in his destruction.

Such was the ever to be lamented fate of that incomparable navigator, captain James Cook, a fate too similar to that of Ferdinand Magellan, the famous Portuguese admiral, in the year 1521, who first demonstrated the orbicular form of our globe, by crossing the South Sea, and arriving at the East Indies by that unknown route, and who lost his life in a skirmish with the natives on one of the Ladrone Islands, which he had discovered, about 60 degrees more to the westward. Happy would it have been, if captain Cook had searched out a harbour in some

part of the island of Owhyhee, remote from that which he had before visited; he might then, probably, not have closed his glorious life by an inglorious death. The natives were certainly dissatisfied at the return of the ships to Karakakooa; the consumption of their animal and vegetable productions had been very great, and they probably found a sensible decrease in their stock. The liberality, not to say profusion, with which the chiefs had heaped presents on their guests, doubtless led to a very improvident and wasteful use of their bounty. When the ships returned, the natives had leisure to reflect upon their conduct, more under the impression of self-interest than the impulse of generous feelings. They might be apprehensive that a continuance of the like contributions would be expected, but which they had lost their former zeal for supplying. With their dispositions thus soured, the slightest misunderstanding was capable of exciting enmity and ill-will, and, among a people who act from their momentary feelings, the progression to open hostilities was direct and rapid.

We have already given a sketch of the history of captain Cook, previous to his becoming a circumnavigator, in the commencement of the account of his first voyage round the world, and shall here subjoin the character drawn of him by captain King: "The earliest habits of captain Cook's life, the course of his services, and the constant application of his mind, all conspired to fit him for that species of enterprise which was assigned to him, and gave him a degree of professional knowledge which can fall to the lot of very few. The constitution of his body was robust, inured to labour, and capable of undergoing the severest hardships. His stomach

bore without difficulty the coarsest and most ungrateful food. The qualities of his mind were of the same hardy vigorous kind with those of his body. His understanding was strong and perspicacious; his judgment, in whatever related to the service he was engaged in, quick and sure. His designs were bold and manly, and, both in the conception and mode of execution, bore evident marks of a great and original genius. His courage was cool and determined, and accompanied with an admirable presence of mind in the moment of danger. His manners were plain and unaffected. His temper, might, perhaps, have been justly blamed, as subject to hastiness and passion, had not these been disarmed by a disposition the most benevolent and humane. But the distinguishing feature in his character was, that unremitting perseverance in the pursuit of his object, which was not only superior to the opposition, the dangers, and the pressure of hardships, but even exempt from the want of ordinary relaxation. During the long and tedious voyages in which he was engaged, his eagerness and activity were never in the least abated. No incidental temptation could detain him for a moment; and every interval of recreation was submitted to by him with a certain degree of impatience, if it could not, by some means, be rendered beneficial to the objects of his pursuit. Perhaps no science ever received greater additions from the labours of a single man, than geography has done from those of captain Cook. In short, if we except the sea of Amur and the Japanese archipelago, which still remain imperfectly known to Europeans, he had completed the hydography of the habitable globe."

After the death of captain Cook, the five surviv-

ing marines and the lieutenant threw themselves into the water, and escaped under cover of a smart fire from the boats. Lieutenant Phillips had scarcely entered the boat, when he saw one of the marines, who was a bad swimmer, struggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the enemy: he immediately jumped into the sea to his assistance, though much wounded himself; and, after receiving a blow on the head from a stone, which had nearly sent him to the bottom, he caught the man by the hair, and brought him safe off. The boats were not more than twenty yards from the shore during the whole transaction. A constant fire was kept up, and a few guns were discharged from the Resolution, which at length compelled the natives to retire. Afterwards no effectual attempt was made to bring off the dead bodies, or the stand of arms, ten of which latter were left in possession of the islanders. The mast and sails were on shore at the Morai, protected by only six marines. Lieutenant King all this time was on shore, at the distance of only a short mile from the scene of action. He assured the natives of his good intentions towards them; and though they assembled in great numbers, yet they discovered no appearance of enmity or ill intentions. Captain Clerke, however, fearing for the safety of the party, and seeing, through his telescope, the vast assemblage of natives, ordered two four-pounders to be fired at them, which happily did no injury to any one, but effectually terrified them, by striking a cocoa-nut-tree, under which some of them were sitting, and shivering a rock close to the spot where they were assembled. Notwithstanding the momentary alarm which this salute had occasioned, the natives soon after attempted to force

this small party from an advantageous situation which they occupied, but were repulsed; and a large reinforcement being landed from the ships, they became overawed, and the mast, sails, and astronomical apparatus were carried off unmolested. Until this was effected, every thing was in the most critical situation; for had they discharged their vengeance on the mast and sails, and cut off the small party on shore, which they might easily have done, the most fatal consequences to the expedition must have followed, and it would have been impossible to have brought both the ships home.

The command of the expedition now devolved on captain Clerke, who removed on board the Resolution. He appointed lieutenant Gore to be captain of the Discovery, and promoted Mr. Harvey, a midshipman, who had been with captain Cook in his two former voyages, to the vacant lieutenancy. Notwithstanding the fierce resentment which every one on board felt for the loss of their beloved leader, yet the many circumstances which attended that fatal transaction, serving to acquit the natives of any premeditated ill designs, prevented that indiscriminating destruction being poured upon them, which might have been immediately effected, if the force of the two ships had been brought to bear upon the shore, where the inhabitants were assembled in great numbers, and where their villages stood. This moderation of conduct was entirely owing to the peremptory orders which were issued out by captain Clerke, who was desirous, if possible, to restore peace without making the shore a scene of slaughter and desolation. Mr. King, who was now first lieutenant on board the Discovery, having the boats of both ships well armed under his com-

mand, proceeded towards the shore, displaying a white flag, which emblem of peace was received by the natives with great apparent satisfaction. As he approached a chief swam to him, and a peremptory demand was made of the dead bodies, particularly captain Cook's, which the chief promised should be brought the next morning. While this intercourse was maintained, the ill intentions of the natives became clearly discernible through the disguise which they had assumed. Several of them were seen dressed in the clothes of the marines who had been killed; and one of the chiefs brandished captain Cook's hanger. On the evening of the next day, the 15th, after it became dark, two of the natives came in a canoe, bringing a small bundle wrapped up in cloth, which contained a piece of human flesh, about nine or ten pounds weight. This, they said, was all that remained of captain Cook; that the rest was cut to pieces and burned, but that the head and all the bones, except what belonged to the trunk, were in the possession of Terreeoboo and the chiefs; that this part of the body had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief of the priests, to be made use of in some religious ceremony, but that he had sent it as a proof of his innocence and attachment. These two Indians were questioned very closely, and apart, whether their countrymen had not eaten the flesh of those men which had been killed? but they testified the utmost horror at the idea, and asked the officers, if such was the custom among them? They afterwards inquired with great earnestness and apparent apprehension, when the Orono would come again, and what he would do to them on his return? The same question was frequently put by other Indians after this interview, and agrees with the general tenour

of their conduct towards captain Cook, which proved, that they considered him as a being of a superior nature. It appeared from the account given by these men, that seventeen of their countrymen had been killed in the first action, five of whom were chiefs, some of them of the first rank. As every thing remained very quiet on board the ships, and no appearances of hostility were discerned, the natives began to grow bold and insolent. Instead of imputing such conduct to its true motive, they thought it proceeded from a want of power to punish. On the 17th the boats of both ships were manned, and sent ashore for water, as it was absolutely necessary to procure a supply: the Discovery was also warped close to the beach, in order to cover that service. No sooner had the party landed than the natives became extremely troublesome, harrassing them with stones, so that the great guns were fired from the ship, and the seamen were ordered to set fire to some straggling houses which had afforded a retreat to the assailants. Being thus furnished with an opportunity of gratifying their thirst of revenge, they spread general devastation over the place, and even the venerable habitations of the friendly priests, which lay contiguous, were destroyed in their undistinguishing fury. It afterwards appeared that those men, conscious of their having taken no part in these scenes of violence, and relying on the assurances which the officers had given, that their persons and property should be safe, had not removed any of their effects into the interior country, as the rest of the inhabitants had done; so that with their dwellings they lost all their property, including every thing which they had collected from the ships. One circumstance, during all these commotions, is

very remarkable: the women of the island, who were on board the ships, never offered to leave them, nor discovered the smallest apprehensions, either for themselves or their countrymen on shore. So entirely unconcerned did they appear, that some of them, who were on deck when the town was in flames, seemed to admire the sight, and frequently cried out that it was maitai, or very fine.—As there is no doubt that the women, who associated with the sailors on board the ships, were of the lowest and most abandoned upon the island, such insensibility may be considered as the natural consequence of habitual profligacy, and not as any peculiar characteristic of these islanders.

The natives being now convinced that it was not the want of ability to punish them, which had hitherto caused their insults to be passed over, desisted from giving the waterers any farther molestation; and in the evening of the 18th, a chief called Eappo, a man of the first consequence in the island, came with presents from Terreeoboo, to sue for peace. He was dismissed with this answer, that "until the remains of captain Cook should be restored, no peace could be granted." This chief informed the captains, that the flesh of all those who had been murdered, together with the bones of the trunks, had been burned. That the limb-bones of the marines had been divided among the inferior chiefs; and that those of captain Cook had been disposed of in the following manner: the head to a great chief named Kahoo-opeon, the hair to another named Maia-maira, and the legs, thighs and arms, to Terreeoboo. On the 19th Eappo again came on board the Resolution, dressed in great state, bringing with him the bones of captain Cook,

wrapped in a large quantity of fine new cloth, and covered with a spotted cloak of black and white feathers. They consisted of both the hands of captain Cook entire, which were well known from a remarkable scar in one of them, which divided the thumb from the fore-finger; the skull, but with the scalp separated from it, and the bones that form the face wanting; the scalp, with the hair upon it cut short, and the ears adhering to it; the bones of both arms, with the skin of the fore-arms hanging to them; the thigh and leg-bones joined together, but without the feet. The ligaments of the joints were entire, and the whole bore evident marks of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the flesh left on them; they were cut in several places, and crammed with salt, apparently with an intention of preserving them. The scalp had a cut in the back part of it, but the skull was free from any fracture. The lower-jaw and feet, which were wanting, Eappo said had been seized by different chiefs; but these were brought the next morning, together with the barrels of his gun, his shoes, and some other trifles. From this chief, information was likewise obtained concerning the cutter, that fatal theft which had cost captain Cook his life! It had been stolen by Pareea's people, probably in revenge for the blow which he had received, and was broke up the day following. On the 21st, in the afternoon, the remains of this great commander having been put into a coffin, and the funeral service being read over them, they were committed to the deep with due military honours. "What our feelings were, on this occasion," says Mr. King, "I leave the world to conceive; those who were present know that it is not in my power to express them."

The foremast of the Resolution being at length stepped, which operation had been attended with considerable difficulty, and some danger, on account of the rottenness of the ropes, which caused the purchase several times to give way, on the evening of the 22d of February, 1779, the two ships weighed and stood out of the bay. The natives were collected in great numbers on the shore, and, as the ships passed along, received the last farewels of those on board with every mark of affection and good-will.

CHAP. III.

Captain Clerke's attempt to navigate the North Sea, in the year 1779; his death; and the return of the ships to England by the route of the East-Indies.

ALL the time that the ships had laid in Karakakooa Bay, when they first touched there, captain Clerke laboured under such a decline of health, that he scarce ever quitted his ship to go on shore; and with a body wasting and decaying, but with a mind still ardent and zealous for the cause in which he was embarked, he now proceeded to accomplish what still remained of the purposes of the expedition. Our commander passed the small islands of Tahoorowa, Ranai, and Moratoi, without stopping at either. On the 27th he brought the ships to an anchor off the island of Woahoo; but the water proving brackish, it was determined to proceed to Atooi, where our navigators had been well provided and entertained the preceding year. Here the ships arrived on the 1st of March, and immediately several men in canoes came alongside; but they were observed not to welcome their visiters with the

same cordiality in their manner, and satisfaction in their countenances, as at the former visit. These Indians no sooner got on board, than one of the men began to relate, that the sailors had left a disorder among the women, of which many persons of both sexes had died. He was himself afflicted with this disease, and gave a very full and minute account of the various symptoms with which it had been attended. The next day an affray happened on shore, between the watering-party and the natives, occasioned by the rudeness of the latter in pressing into the line, for which a marine gave one of them a slight prick with a bayonet; but by the spirited exertions of Mr. King, who commanded the party, and his prudent moderation, the misunderstanding subsided, but not without bloodshed, for a man and a woman were shot. All the chiefs had absented themselves, and without their interposition, the common people had ever been found to be turbulent and unmanageable. The next day the beach was deserted of natives, the landing-place and lake being found to be tabooed with white flags; from whence it was concluded, that some of the chiefs had visited those parts in the night. A day or two after, two or three chiefs came on board the ships, and apologized for the conduct of the people. They informed the commander, that the government of Atooi was in dispute between Toneoneo, who held it when captain Cook was there last year, and a boy named Teavee, both of whom were the grandsons of Perreorannee, king of Woahoo, by different fathers. To the former of these the government of Atooi had been assigned, and that of Oneeheow to the latter, by their grandfather, who, of course, claimed the supreme power over both islands.

This quarrel had arisen about the goats which captain Cook had left there, the right of property in which was claimed by Toneoneo. A few days before the arrival of the ships, a battle had been fought in consequence of this dispute, in which Toneoneo had been worsted. The mother of Teavee, who had married a second husband, a chief of Atooi, and at the head of a powerful faction there, had formed a design of improving this success, to the driving of Toneono out of the island, and advancing her son to the government. On the 6th, the mother and sister of the young prince, and his father-in-law, with many other chiefs of that party, came on board the Resolution, and made several curious and valuable presents to captain Clerke; among the rest some fish-hooks, which they assured him were formed of the bones of his old friend, the father of Terreeoboo, who had been killed in an unsuccessful descent upon the island of Woahoo; and the prince's sister presented him with a fly-flap, the handle of which was a human bone, and had been given her as a trophy by her father-in-law. Young Teavee was not of the company, being engaged in performing some religious ceremonies, in consequence of the victory obtained, which ceremonies were to continue twenty days.

Whilst this party was in the ship, Toneoneo likewise paid a visit to captain Clerke; but when he heard that the dowager-princess was on board, (whose ambition appears to have been the principal cause of the war,) he could scarcely be prevailed upon to ascend. This reluctance did not seem to arise from any apprehension which he entertained concerning his own safety, but from a dislike to meet one to whom he bore so strong an enmity.

Their meeting was silent, but with angry and lowering looks on both sides. He staid only a short time, and seemed much dejected; but the attendant women upon the princess, both at his entering and going away, prostrated themselves before him. It appeared very extraordinary, that a person who was then in a state of actual hostility, and preparing for another battle, should trust himself, almost alone, within the power of his enemies; and it should seem from thence, that the civil dissensions, which are frequent throughout all the South Sea islands, are carried on without much acrimony, and that the deposed governor continues to enjoy the rank of an earee.—It is difficult to reconcile that insulting triumph over a dead enemy, in which these islanders indulge themselves, with this mildness towards a living foe; and equally hard to account for such an accommodation of feelings to times and circumstances, among Indians, who are, in general, entirely under the influence of that passion which has possession of them.

On the 8th the two ships sailed for Oneeheow, another of the Sandwich Islands, where they anchored in the afternoon. Mr. Bligh went so far to the north as to satisfy himself that Oreehoua was a separate island from Oneeheow. On the 13th they finally took leave of this cluster, and sailed to the westward. The sight of men of war and tropical birds, with many boobies, not many days after, indicated the vicinity of land, but it was not their fortune to meet with any. Captain Clerke intended to have kept for some time within the tropical latitudes, in hopes of making discoveries; but the unsettled state of the weather, together with light winds, determined him to steer north-west by north.

On the 29th of March the thermometer was generally at 80 degrees, and sometimes at 83. At that time there was a considerable swell from the N.W. and in no period of the voyage did the ship roll so violently. On the 4th of April they got out of the tropical regions; on the 6th they lost the trade-winds, in latitude 29° 50′.

The standing orders established by captain Cook, of airing the bedding, placing fires between decks, washing them with vinegar, and smoking them with gun-powder, were observed without intermission. For some time even the occupation of mending the sailor's old jackets had risen into a duty both of difficulty and importance: for in ships of war the sailors are so accustomed to be directed in the care of themselves by their officers, that they lose every idea of foresight, and contract the thoughtlessness of infants. The experience they had during the voyage to the north the preceding year, might have made them sensible of the necessity of paying some attention to those concerns; but if such reflections ever occurred to them, their impression was so transitory, that upon the return of the ships to the tropical climates, their fur jackets, as well as the rest of their warm covering, were kicked about the decks, as things of no value, though it was generally known in both ships, that they were to make another voyage towards the pole. These discarded habits were picked up by the officers, and, being carefully laid by, were now restored to the owners. On the 10th the ships crossed the track of the Spanish galleons from the Manillas to Acapulco; and expected to have fallen in with the island of Rio de Pata, which De Lisle lays down as in latitude 33° 30′ north, longitude 166° east. The next

day, several bunches of the sea-weed, and a log of wood were seen, but no other signs of land appeared. A leak had for some time been started on board the Resolution, which was kept under by the hand-pumps until April 13th, when the water, which had lodged in the coal-hole, not finding a sufficient vent into the well, forced up the platforms over it, and in a moment set every thing afloat. Two days were employed in very laborious exertions, when a hole being cut through the bulk-head, or partition that separated the coal-hole from the fore-hold, a free passage was made for the body of the water into the well; but one-half of the people were kept constantly pumping and baling until this was accomplished. On the 19th of April the air began to be exceedingly cold, and though the wind blew from the south-east, the thermometer remained at the freezing point. On the 23d the peninsula of Kamtschatka came in sight, presenting mountains covered with snow. For six days afterwards contrary winds prevented the ships reaching the bay of Awatska, which lies near its south-eastern extremity. They had no sooner entered it than the letter which Mr. Ismyloff had given captain Cook, when at Oonalashka, was sent on shore, and proved of the most essential service, as the officer who commanded at the town of St. Peter and St. Paul, a sergeant in the Russian service, was greatly alarmed at the appearance of such a phenomenon as two large ships sailing into that bay, and supposed them to be pirates.

No appearance of spring had yet cheered this dreary region. Here the ships could not be supplied either with provisions or naval stores, without orders being received from Bolcheretsk, where the gover-

nor of Kamtschatka resided; and such were the restrictions laid by the Russian government, that neither the commander, his people, nor the natives, durst go on board the ships until permission had been obtained from thence. To this place, therefore, dispatches were sent off on the 29th, about noon, on a sledge drawn by dogs over the snow; and early in the morning of the 3d of May an answer arrived. The distance from this port to Bolcheretsk, by the usual route, is about 135 English miles; so that they were little more than three days and a half in performing a journey of 270 miles. Indeed such is the incredible speed of the dogs which draw these sledges, that the commander of Kamtschatka informed Mr. King, that the journey from St. Peter and St. Paul to Bolcheretsk, and back again, was generally performed in two days and a half, and that he had once received an express from the latter place in three and twenty hours.

On the return of this courier all restraints in the intercourse between the inhabitants and the ships ceased; but a supply of provisions for those on board was not much facilitated, as all the live cattle at the place consisted of two heifers. Captain Clerke therefore found it necessary to dispatch lieutenant King to Bolcheretsk, which lies on the western or opposite side of the peninsula, at the entrance of the sea of Okotsk, in order to obtain necessaries. With him went Mr. Webber, who, being acquainted with the German tongue, was to act as an interpreter. The inclemency of the weather detained them from setting out for three days; but on the 7th of May they proceeded as far as the entrance of the river of Awatska, where they were met by the country boats, and proceeded

A Kamtscadale travelling in Winter.

Dublin Published by J. Christie. 17. Rose Lane.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS.

river, they embarked in canoes for the town, having then to proceed eighty miles; in which passage they were so much impeded by the shallows, that they did not arrive until the 12th.

Major Behm, the governor, received his visitants with great cordiality; captain Shmaleff, the second in command, and the whole body of merchants in the place, behaved with the utmost politeness and attention. Our two travellers had then been absent from their own country almost three years, and they felt the most painful disappointment at finding that the governor could communicate no information respecting England, of a much later date than their departure from it.

The sloops were not then arrived with their annual supply of necessaries from Okotsk; but the major, with great liberality, imparted from the little stock of provisions which remained, to the necessities of the strangers, absolutely refusing to take any bills for their value on the victualling-office in London, which Mr. King pressed him to accept: at the same time saying, that he was certain he could not oblige his mistress more, than in giving every assistance in his power to her good friends and allies the English, and it would give her peculiar satisfaction to hear, that in so remote a part of the world, her dominions had afforded any relief to ships engaged in such services as theirs. Instead of taking bills, he would only take a bare attestation of the particulars with which they were furnished, that it might be transmitted to his court, as a certificate of having performed his duty.

A private application having been made to a principal merchant in the town for some tobacco for the sailors, who, owing to their improvident

conduct, had been without that favourite weed ever since they had quitted Oonalashka, immediately four bags of this article, weighing upward of one hundred pound weight each, were lodged in the house which was appointed for the residence of Mr. King and his companion, as a present from the governor and garrison to the sailors. At the same time twenty loaves of fine sugar, and as many pounds weight of tea, were presented to the officers of the ships. Madame Behm also presented captain Clerke with fresh butter, honey, figs, rice, and some other articles. In vain did the gentlemen try to restrain this profusion of bounty, being convinced that they were receiving almost the whole stock of the garrison: the constant answer the major returned was, "You have suffered a great deal, and must needs be in distress." Indeed the length of time they had been out, since they touched at any known port, appeared to the Russians incredible.

On the 16th the gentlemen quitted Bolcheretsk on their return, and were accompanied by major Behm, who had resigned the government to captain Shmaleff. They reached the town of St. Peter and St. Paul on the 21st, having been a fortnight absent on this embassy. The sailors, to express their gratitude for the bountiful supply of tobacco, voluntarily requested their captains, that their allowance of grog might be stopped, and the spirits presented in their names to the garrison of Bolcheretsk. The major, however, would not accept this grateful effusion of the tars; but captain Clerke and the rest of the officers gave an equal quantity of rum for the garrison, with a dozen or two of Cape wine for Madame Behm.

As the major was soon to set off for Petersburg,

he offered to charge himself with any dispatches the gentlemen of the ships might wish to entrust to his care. Captain Clerke most gladly availed himself of this opportunity to convey some papers relating to the voyage, to be delivered to the English ambassador at the Russian court: and being sensible that a very hazardous part of the voyage still remained to be undertaken, he determined to send the whole of the journal of captain Cook, with that part of his own which completed the period from his commander's death until the arrival of the ships at Kamtschatska, together with a chart of all the discoveries. Mr. Baily and Mr. King, by the same conveyance, transmitted a general account of their proceedings to the board of longitude; which put the admiralty in possession of a complete history of the principal occurrences during the voyage. On the 26th the major took leave, on his return to Bolcheretsk. The intrinsic value of the private presents which were received from this noble-hearted Livonian, exclusive of the stores, which might be carried to the public account, according to Mr. King, must have amounted, reckoning the current prices of the articles in that country, to upwards of two hundred pounds; but this generosity, extraordinary as it must appear in itself, was exceeded by the delicacy with which all his favours were conferred; and the studied manner in which he endeavoured to prevent those who received them from feeling the weight of obligations which he knew they had no means of requiting. Nor did he show himself less mindful of their future wants; and, as he supposed it more than probable that a passage either to Europe or the East-Indies would not be discovered, and that the ships

would return to Kamtschatka at the fall of the year, he obtained from captain Clerke a list of such flour and cordage as the ships would stand in need of, and promised that they should be sent from Okotsk, and wait his return. He likewise gave the captain a paper, enjoining all the subjects of the empress, whom he might happen to fall in with, to render him every assistance in their power.

Such was the remediless state of captain Clerke's health, that neither the repose which he enjoyed in the harbour, nor a milk and vegetable diet, with which he was supplied by the humane assistance of a kind-hearted priest, named Romanoff Vereshagen, who officiated at a village called Paratounka, about sixteen miles distant from the town of St. Peter and St. Paul, could restore that worthy officer; on the contrary, he declined rapidly whilst making use of these restoratives. Yet, debilitated and wasting as he was, he resolved to employ the very last remnant of his life in a second attempt to find out a northern passage. So much was he animated with the zeal of his great master and exemplar!

Whilst the ships lay here, the carpenter's mate, named John Macintosh, died. He had laboured under a dysentery ever since the departure of the ships from the Sandwich Islands; he was the fourth person whe had been lost by sickness during the voyage, but the first who could be said, from his age, and the constitutional habits of his body, to have had, on setting out, an equal chance with the rest of his comrades of living to return home. This man was supposed to be about sixty years of age.

On the arrival of the ships the Russian hospital was found to be in a condition truly deplorable, an

inveterate scurvy prevailing there very generally. Captain Clerke put them all under the care of the surgeons of the ships, and ordered a supply of sour krout, and malt for wort, to be furnished for their use, which produced the most salutary effects in a very short time.

On the 6th of June twenty head of cattle arrived, by order of the commander of Verchnei-ostong, a place situated on the river of Kamtschatka, near a hundred miles, in a straight line, from the bay. The Kamtschadales had been seventeen days driving them down, notwithstanding which they were in good condition. So large a supply of rye-flour was obtained, that the crews were put on full allowance of bread, which they had not been indulged in since they left the Cape.

On the 15th of June the ships cleared the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul. Before day-light on that day they were surprised with a rumbling noise, resembling distant hollow thunder; and when the day broke, the decks and sides of the ships were seen to be covered with a fine dust, like emery, near an inch thick: the air, at the same time, continued loaded and darkened with this substance, which proceeded from a volcanic mountain, situated to the north of the harbour. It was so thick and black that the body of the hill could not be distinguished. About twelve o'clock, and during the afternoon, the explosions became louder, and were followed by showers of cinders, which were, in general, about the size of peas, though many of those that were picked up upon the deck were larger than a hazel-nut: along with the cinders fell several small stones, which had undergone no change from the action of fire; some stones fell at the ostrog or

village, which were of the size of a goose's egg. In the evening dreadful thunder and lightning came on, which, with the darkness of the atmosphere, and the sulphureous smell of the air, produced altogether a most awful and terrifying effect. The ships were at that time about eight leagues from the foot of the mountain.

The aspect of the country was now very different from what it presented on their first arrival. The snow, excepting what remained on the tops of some very high mountains, had disappeared; and the sides of the hills, which in many parts were well wooded, were covered with a beautiful verdure. Captain Clerke kept within sight of the coast of Kamtschatka, as much as the weather would permit, in order to ascertain its position; and the result of his navigation served to disprove, in almost every particular, the manner in which that coast is laid down by Muller. In this second navigation of the North Sea, the farthest advance which the ships were capable of making was to latitude 70° 26′, and in the longitude of 165° 6′ W., which was 18″ short of the point which captain Cook reached the preceding year, in a direction a little more than 2° to the westward of his course, and just a month earlier in the summer, being on the 18th of July. The remainder of that month was employed in navigating this sea in various directions, gradually proceeding to the southward; and on the 31st the ships repassed Beering's Straits, which separates the two continents, to the great joy of all on board, who ardently longed for a termination of their sufferings and perils. Leaving Clerke's and Gore's Islands, which had been discovered and named by captain Cook, to the eastward, our navigator traversed a large extent

of ocean without meeting any land. On the 18th of August the ships again entered Awatska Bay; but the day before captain Clerke breathed his last. His remains were interred on shore, and captain Gore, to whom the chief command now devolved, put up, in the parish church of Paratounka, an escutcheon, prepared by Mr. Webber, setting forth captain Clerke's age and rank, and the object of the expedition in which he was engaged at the time of his decease. In this bay the ships contiuued till the 9th of October.

The commerce of this country is carried on by a company of merchants, established by the present empress. This company originally consisted of twelve, and three more have since been added to it. They are distinguished by wearing a gold medal, as a mark of the empress's encouragement and protection of the fur-trade. Formerly they carried on their concerns entirely by barter, but of late years every article is bought and sold for ready money only, and the quantity of specie in circulation in so poor a country is surprising. The furs sell at a high price, and the situation and habits of life of the natives call for few articles in return. The sailors had brought a great number of furs from the coast of America, and were not less astonished than delighted with the quantity of silver the merchants paid down for them; but on finding neither gin-shops to resort to, nor tobacco, nor any thing else that they cared for, to be had for money, the roubles soon became troublesome companions; and Mr. King, who was now captain of the Resolution, often observed the men kicking them about the deck. The merchants gave at first thirty roubles for a sea-otter's skin, and for others

in proportion; but finding that there was a considerable quantity to dispose of, and that they had men to deal with who did not know how to keep up the market, they afterwards bought them for much less.

The instructions from the board of admiralty having left a discretionary power with the commanding officer of the expedition, in case of failure in the search of a passage from the Pacific Ocean into the Atlantic, to return to England by whatever route he should think best for the further improvement of geography, captain Gore demanded of the principal officers their sentiments in writing, respecting the manner in which these orders might be more effectually obeyed; and they were of opinion, that the condition of the ships, as well as of the sails and cordage, made it unsafe to attempt, at so advanced a season of the year, to navigate the sea between Japan and Asia, which would otherwise have afforded the largest field for discovery; and that it was therefore adviseable to keep to the eastward of that island, and in their way thither to run along the Kuriles, and examine more particularly the islands that lie nearest the northern coast of Japan; next to survey the coast of the Japanese Islands, and afterwards to make the coast of China, as far to the northward as they were able, and run along it to Macao. This plan captain Gore adopted; and captain King received orders, in case of separation, to proceed immediately to Macao.

At six o'clock in the evening of the 9th of October, they got out of Awatska Bay, which is described as affording the most extensive and safest harbour that was discovered during the voyage, and the only port in this part of the world capable

of admitting ships of very considerable burden and fit for giving them every kind of repairs. At six in the afternoon of the 12th, they came in sight of Cape Lopatka, the southernmost extremity of Kamtschatka, the precise situation of which was determined to be 51° N. latitude, 156° 45′ E. longitude. The wind blowing steadily from the westward for the two following days, captain Gore was obliged to stand to the southward, and consequently saw no more of the Kurile islands. Five islands laid down by D'Anville, and called by him the Three Sisters, Zellany and Zunashir, were found not to lie in the position in which they are placed by that geographer; and, in confirmation of the conjecture of Mr. Muller, they were supposed to be no other than the islands of Jesso. Strong winds from the N. W. rendered it impossible to reach these islands, notwithstanding every endeavour was used; so that at length Mr. Gore was obliged, on the 24th of October, to give up all further thoughts of discovery to the north of Japan, aud, shaping his course W. S. W. on the 26th came in sight of the island of Japan, the coast of which is described by Kæmpfer as the most dangerous in the whole world. The inhabitants too, entertain such an aversion to strangers, that they are disposed to commit the most savage barbarities on all that fall into their hands. Another heavy gale arose whilst the ships lay off this coast, and continued for a considerable time; and, as they were in a leaky condition, the sails worn out, and incapable of resisting a gale of wind, with the rigging so rotten as to require constant and perpetual repairs, these were sufficient reasons to induce the commander to give up all thoughts of attempting to land; besides which,

the extraordinary effects of the currents there, the unsettled state of the weather, and the improbability of any change for the better at that late season of the year, rendered it absolutely necessary that the ships should leave Japan altogether, and prosecute the voyage to China.

In proceeding thither an island was discovered, in latitude 24° 48′ N. longitude 141° 12′ E. which, from the sulphureous smell proceeding from it, and some streams of smoke which were seen to arise from the top of the hill, was called by the commander Sulphur Island. Much time was afterwards lost in searching for the Basbee Islands, which could not be found. The ships came to an anchor at Macao in the evening of the 1st of December, and, on visiting some English gentlemen who were resident there, the important events which had occurred in Europe, during the long period of time in which they had been cut off from all intercourse with that quarter of the world, were now at once revealed. The unhappy contests in which they found their country to be engaged, filled their minds with astonishment and concern, whilst they deeply regretted that their absence had deprived them of an opportunity of taking an active part in her service. Nothing could exceed the ragged appearance both of the younger officers and seamen when they entered this port; for as the service had already exceeded, by near a twelvemonth, the time which it was at first imagined the ships would remain at sea, almost the whole of their original stock of European clothes had been long worn out, or patched up with skins, and the various manufactures which had been met with in the course of their discoveries; these were now again mixed and

eked out with the gaudiest silks and cottons of China.

Here a very advantageous market was found for the skins which had been collected on the voyage, of which a large quantity remained, notwithstanding what had been disposed of at Kamtschatka. Captain King undertook to dispose of those which had been the property of the deceased commanders; and having the address to counteract the frauds and impositions which the Chinese merchants endeavoured to practise, under the most specious professions of giving more than their intrinsic value, on account of the delicate situation in which the captain stood, he procured the sum of 800 dollars for about twenty skins of sea-otters, although he was at first offered no more than 300. Such was the estimation in which this merchandize was held, that one seaman sold his stock of skins for 800 dollars, and a few prime skins, which were clean, and had been well preserved, were sold for one hundred and twenty each, (£27.) The whole amount of the value, in specie and goods, which was got for the furs in both ships, captain King is of opinion did not fall short of £2000 sterling; and it was generally supposed, that at least two-thirds of the quantity which had been at first obtained from the Americans, were either spoiled, worn out, or had been given away or otherwise disposed of at Kamtschatka. The furs were at first collected without any idea of their real value; the greatest part had been worn by the Indians from whom they were purchased, were afterwards preserved with little care, and frequently used for bed-clothes, and other purposes, during the northern cruise. Add to which, that it is highly probable they were sold at

China below the market-price of that commodity. When all these considerations are taken into the account, the advantages which might be derived from a voyage to the American coast, if undertaken with commercial views, appear to be so great as to call for the public attention. The silver which poured into the ships in consequence of this market for furs, made the sailors frantic to return to Cook's river, and there procure a fresh cargo, by which each man might make his fortune. This chimerical scheme rendered them so ungovernable, that their behaviour was little short of mutiny. Two of the men actually stole away in one of the ship's boats, a six-oar'd cutter, as was supposed, on a scheme of this kind.—So absurd is the conduct of a sailor, when his mind is possessed with the idea of gain, although the accomplishment of his wishes would only urge him on to restless dissipation and joyless profusion.

Whilst the ships lay here, captain King was shown, in a garden belonging to an English gentleman at Macao, the rock, under which as the tradition goes, the poet Camoens used to sit and compose his Lusiad. It is a lofty arch, of one solid stone, and forms the entrance of a grotto, dug out of the rising ground behind it. The rock is overshadowed by trees, and commands a magnificent view of the sea, and the interspersed islands.

On the 12th of January, 1780, the ships unmoored, and scaled (cleansed) the guns, which, on board the Discovery, amounted to ten; so that by means of four additional ports they could, if occasion required it, fight seven on a side. The Resolution also had increased the number of her guns from twelve to sixteen; and in both ships a stout

barricade was carried round their upper works, and every other precaution taken to give their small force as respectable an appearance as possible. Here, however, they heard of instructions having been given to all ships of war, to suffer the ships under the command of captain Cook to proceed on their voyage without molestation, in case of falling in with them; the like orders were also said to have been given by the American congress to the vessels employed in their service. Captain Gore, therefore, thought himself bound, in return for the liberal exceptions made in his favour, to refrain from availing himself of any opportunity of capture which either the French or Americans might afford, and to observe throughout his voyage a strict neutrality. On the 20th the ships touched at the island of Pulo Condore, where a plentiful supply of buffaloes was obtained. At noon, on the 7th of February, they got sight of the island of Java. At Prince's Island the Discovery was heeled, and her bottom, which was very foul, scraped and hogged. The general resemblance which the natives of this island bear, both in figure, colour, manners, and even language, to the nations of the South Sea, was very striking. Captain King, who had not escaped without his full share of the effects of the Javanese climate, from his ill state of health was rendered incapable of pursuing the comparison so minutely as he could have wished.

From the time the ships entered the Straits of Banca, the men began to experience the powerful effects of that pestilential climate. Two of the Discovery's people fell dangerously ill of malignant putrid fevers, which, however, were prevented from spreading, by putting the patients apart from the

rest, in the most airy births: many were attacked with teazing coughs; others complained of violent pains in the head; and even the healthiest felt a sensation of suffocating heat, together with an insuperable languor, and total loss of appetite; but not a man died; owing in part to the vigorous health of the crews when the ships arrived in those parts, as well as to the strict attention, now become habitual in the men, to the salutary regulations introduced among them by captain Cook. In the evening of the 25th of February, the wind changed suddenly to the southward, accompanied with heavy rains, and began to blow with great violence. During the night, almost every sail that was bent gave way, and most of them were split to rags; their rigging also suffered materially; and they were obliged the next day, to bend their last suit of sails on board the Discovery, and to knot and splice the rigging, their cordage being all expended. This sudden storm they attributed to the change from the monsoon to the regular trade-wind. Their latitude was then about 13° 10′ S. From this time to the 28th of March, a regular trade-wind blew from S. E. by S. with fine weather; it then left them in a violent thunder-storm, in latitude 31° 42′ S. longitude, 35° 26′ E. On the 12th of April the ships dropped anchor in False Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope.

When the captains waited on baron Plettenberg, the governor, they received a very agreeable testimony of the high veneration in which he held the character of captain Cook; for in one of the principal apartments of his house, a picture of Van Trump was placed, and another of De Ruyter, with a vacant space left between them, which the governor said he meant to fill up with the portrait of

captain Cook, and for that purpose he requested their assistance, when they should arrive in England, to purchase one for him at any price.

From a Spanish ship which had touched at the Cape, the governor had learnt that orders were given to all the officers of his nation not to molest the ships under the command of captain Cook; these assurances confirmed captain Gore in the resolution he had taken to maintain, on his part, a neutral conduct. The ships left this place on the 14th of May; on the 12th of June they passed the equator, for the fourth time during this voyage. On the 12th of August our navigators made the western coast of Ireland, and were compelled by strong southerly winds to steer to the northward; on the 27th both ships came to an achor at Stromness, from whence captain King was dispatched to acquaint the board of admiralty with their arrival; and on the 4th of October, the ship arrived safe at the Nore, after an absence of four years, two months and twenty-two days.

THE END.

CATHEDRAL LIBRARY,
111 E. 50TH STREET
NEW YORK CITY
6270

1

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT

This book is under no circumstances to be taken from the Building

form 410

B'D JUN 10 1916